

THE
TRIVMPHS
OF GODS RE-
VENGE, AGAINST
THE CRYING AND
Execrable sinne of
Murther.

*Expressed in thirty severall Tragicall
Histories, (digested into sixe Bookes) which
containe great varietie of mournfull and
memorable Accidents, Amorous,
Morall, Divine.*

BOOKE. III.

Written by IOHN REYNOLDS.

AT LONDON,
Printed by AVGSTINE MATHEVVES,
for William Lee, and are to be sold at his Shop in
Fleet-street, at the signe of the golden
Buck, neere Seriants Inne.

1624.

THE
TRIVMPHS
OF GODS RE
VENGE AGAINST
THE CRYING AND

Reverend in Christ Thomas Twiss
Bishop of Exeter

By John Reynolds

Printed by Augustine Mathewes
at London



TO THE RIGHT
HONOVABLE, (AND
TRVLY WORTHY OF ALL
Honour) WILLIAM Earle of Pembroke,

*Lo. Chamberlaine to His Maiesty, Knight of
the thrice Noble Order of the Garter, and
one of the Lords of His most Honou-
rable Prinie Councell.*

RIGHT HONOVABLE:

IT is not your *Dignities*,
but your *Vertues*; not your
Greatnesse, but your *Good-
nesse* which first coniured
my affection, then com-
manded my resolution to
direct these (forraigne) *Tragicall Histories*, to
your *Honours* protection and Patronage;
For whiles others (sayling with the corrupt
Tyde and Courent of the times) not onely
admire, but adore the exteriour parts of men,
their *Fortunes*. I, for my part, both honour

The Epistle Dedicatory.

and reuerence their interiour qualities, and ornaments, *Pietie, Fidelitie, Generosity,* (three Daughters of *Heauen*, embleming and personating the three Heauenly Graces on Earth, *Faith, Hope, (Charitie)* who transport and conuey our *Memories* as farre as the limmits of *Time*, and a degree beyond it, and (on the wings of *Truth*) mount our *Fames* from *Earth* to *Heauen*, from *Enuie* to *Glory*, and from *Mortality* to *Eternity*. Not but that I euery way respect and honour that blood which is *Noble*, but that I yet more deerely honour, and deeply affect those *Vertues* which haue a secret, and (as I may iustly say) a sacred power in them to enoble *Nobility*, both which transcendant *Privileges*, finding hand in hand cheerefully to march, and really to sympathize in your *Honour* (sith vpon the resplendant lustre of your actions, *Enuie* is not capeable to insinuate a blemish, nor *Detraction* of power to introduce or inforce a disparagement) was the sole preuayling motiue of this my *Zeale* and *Ambition*. And when I consider that the *Moralitie*, *Ends* and *Punishments* of these foule and crying finnes of *Murther*, which my two former

Bookes

The Epistle Dedicatory.

Bookes (of this *Nature*) haue already related and divulged to the world; haue not onely beene approued but applauded of our most Excellent, and Sacred King (as onely ayming at Gods glorie, and our owne reformation and preservation) I rather hope then dispaire, that this *Third* (wherein the iust reuenge of God, the Great and Supream King of kings, is no lesse apparant and conspicuous) will be accepted and receiued of your Ho. Againe, it fights against Murther; which not onely seekes to slay *Humanitie*, but therein to murder *Religion*, which is the *Life*; and Soule thereof. It denounceth warre against *Nature* and *Grace*, against the Diuine Ordinances of *Heauen*, and the Coactiue and penall Lawes of *Earth*, whereby they are established and maintained; as being the *Cymment* and *Sinewes*, the *Veines* and *Arteries* of *Monarchies* and *Commonweales*; as also against the Maiesty of God, and the crownes and dignities of *Soueraigne Kings* and *Princes*, his *Royall Deputies* and *Vicegerents* heere on earth, sith thereby hee loseth soules and these subiects; yea, so generall and so prodigious a progression; doth this scarlet

The Epistle Dedicatory.

sinne of premeditated and wilfull murther, make in the vniuersall World, and with so bloodie a deluge & inundation, it not onely washes but (as it were) drownes the face of the *Christian*, that wee haue now farre truer cause to crie out, and iuster reason to exclaime, then did *Quintus Catulus* (so many centuries of yeares since) *O with whom, or where shall wee liue in safety; sith in Warres wee kill those who are armed, and in Peace, who are unarmed; Yea, your Ho. who (with a happie constancie, and constant happinesse) is still a professed Champion for Charitie against Enuie, and a Tutularie Protector for Vertue against Vice,* (whiles diuers great ones of the World, make it not onely their practise, but their glorie to performe the contrary) will, I hope, runne ouer these mournefull *Histories*, (and the seuerall accidents they relate) with your eye of pittie, and spirit of compassion; and therein with a Religious ioy, and pious insultation, not onely admire the *Providence*, but applaud, and magnifie the *Iustice of God*, in so timely cutting off these Monsters of *Nature*, and bloody butchers of Mankinde, with these their condigne punishments and deserued

The Epistle Dedicatory.

deserued deaths; In which Hope and Confidence, this Booke is no more mine, but your *Honours*, and no lesse is hee, who collected and penned it; and that my Name may futurely oblige mee to make this present promise of my penne reall; Whiles many others (in a vertuous emulation) contend to deserue the *Honour* of your *Fauour*, and striue to purchase the felicitie of your *Commands*, none shall doe it, with more Integritie and lesse Vanity,
then

*Your Honours truly
denoted*

JOHN REYNOLDS.

deserted death, in which Hope and Con-
fidence, this Book is no more mine, but your
property, and no less is it, who collected
and penned it, and that my Name may in-
timely oblige me to make this present pro-
mise of my pen to you. While many others
(in a various estimation) contend to delectate
the favour of your favour, and strive to pur-
chase the felicity of your favour,
none shall do it with more love
grace and better Vantage
than

Your Honour truly
devoted

John Heywood



The Grounds, and Contents of these Histories.

History XI.

De Salez killeth Vaumartin in a Duell; La Hay causeth Michaelle to poyson La Frange; De Salez loves La Hay, and because his father Argentier will not consent that hee marry her, stifles him in his bed, and then takes her to his wife; she turnes Strumpet, and cuts his throat; as he is dying, hee accuseth her of this bloody fact, and himselfe for murdering his father Argentier: so his dead body is hang'd to the Gallows, then burnt; La Hay confesseth this murder, and likewise that shee caused Michaelle to poyson La Frange: she hath her right hand cut off, and is then burnt alive; Michaelle is broken on the wheele, and his dead body throwen into the River.

History XII.

Albemare causeth Pedro and Leonardo to murder Baretano, and hee after marrieth Clara, whom Baretano first sought to marry: Hee causeth his man Valerio to poyson Pedro in prison, and by a letter which Leonardo sent him, Clara perceives that her husband Albemare had hired and caused Pedro and Leonardo to murder her first love Baretano; which letter she reveales to the Iudge; so he is hang'd, and likewise Valerio and Leonardo for these their bloody crimes.

The Contents.

History XIII.

La Vasselay poysoneth her wayting-mayd **Gratiana**, because she is jealous that her husband **De Merson** is dishonest with her; whereupon he lues from her: In reuenge whereof, she causeth his man **La Villete** to murder him in a **Wood**, and then marries him in requitall. The sayd **La Villete** a yeare after riding thorow the same **Wood**, his Horse fallies with him, and almost kills him; when hee confesseth the murder of his master **De Merson**, and accuseth his wife **La Vasselay** to be the cause thereof: So for these their bloody crimes, he is hanged, and she burnt alive.

History XIV.

Fidelia and **Cælestina** cause **Carpi** and **Monteleone**, with their two **Laguayes**, **Lorenzo** and **Anselmo**, to murder their Father **Captaine Beneuente**, which they performe. **Monteleone** and his **Laguay Anselmo** are drowned, **Fidelia** hangs her selfe, **Lorenzo** is hanged for a robbery, and on the Gallowes confesseth the murdering of **Beneuente**, **Carpi** hath his right hand, then his head cut off; **Cælestina** is belieded and her body burnt.

History XV.

Maurice like a bloody villaine, and damnable sonne, throwes his Mother **Christina** into a **Well**, and drownes her: the same hand and arme of his wherewith he did it, rots away from his body; and being disgraced of his wits in Prison, hee there confesseth this foule and inhumane murder, for the which he is hanged.



THE
TRIVMPHS OF
GODS REVENGE A-
gainst the crying and execrable
Sinne of Murther.

History XI.

De Salez killeth Vaumartin in a Duell; La Hay causeth Michaëlle to poyson La Frange; De Salez loues La Hay, and because his father Argentier will not consent that hee marry her, stifeth him in his bedd, and then takes her to his wife; shee turues Strumpet, and cuts his throat; as hee is dying, hee accuseth her of this bloody fact, and himselfe for murthering his father Argentier: so his dead body is hang'd to the gallowes, then burnt; La Hay confesseth this murther, and likewise that shee caused Michaëlle to poyson La Frange: shee hath her right hand cut off, and is then burnt alue; Michaëlle is broken on the wheele, and his dead body thrown into the Riuer.



Lthoug our peruerse Nature, and rebellious thoughts may for awhile make vs esteem Enuy to be no Vice, and Murther a Vertue; yet if wee will erect the eyes of our Faith, and so looke from ourselues to our soules, from Earth to Heauen, and

from Sathan to God; we shall then assuredly find that hating our Christian Brother, wee hate *Christ* who made vs Brothers: and murdering him, that we maliciously and presumptuously attempt to recrucifie *Christ*, by whom we must, without whom we cannot be saued. But if we will turne Atheists, and beleue there is a Heauen, but no God; or Devils, & say there is a *God*, but no Heauen, then that vncharitable *Tenent* of Enuy may be held lawfull, and this bloody position of Murther, practised, because priuiledged, Else not. Wherefore let vs who are *Christians*, resend this deuillish doctrine, and doctrine of Devils, to Hell from whence it first came, and to the deuill himselfe who first broached and inuented it: sith wee cannot professe it, without making our selues *Agents*, nor perpetrate it, without becoming his very limbs and members, in regard they will infallibly prooue the wofull forerunners of our misery, and the wretched Heraulds of our perdition: as the bloody *Actors* of this ensuing mournfull *History* will make good, and instance to vs in themselves when the seuerer Iudgements, and punishments of *God* befell them so suddenly, as it was too late for them either to reuoke, or bewaile the enormitie of these their foule and infernall crimes.

T*Holouse* (as well for greatnes as state, the third citie & Court of *Parliament* of *France*) is the place wherein we shal vnderstand, there was lately committed & perpetrated, a *tragical History*, which hath many mournfull and bloody dependances; the which to branch forth, and depaint in their naked colours, we must vnderstand, that therein liued a Councellour of
that

that famous *Court* (being a rich *Gentleman* well descended) rearmed *Monsieur de Argentier*, whose wife being deceased, left him father onely to one hopefull sonne, of the age of two and twentie yeares, rearmed *Monsieur de Salez*, who being wholly addicted to the Warres (from which martiall Profession it was impossible for his old father to diuert and withdraw him) he procured him an *Ensignes* place vnder *Monsieur de Roquelaure*, whom he serued in the *Adriaticke* Sea, vnder the Noble and Generous *Venicians*, who then stood rather iealous, then fearefull of the power and greatnesse of *Spaine*; but the *Chymera* of that warre (after the terme of three or foure yeares) being vanished and blowen away, and consequently betwixt those two mighty *Estates*, a new *Peace* contracted and concluded, (although the old had not been actually broken and delacerated) home returns *Monsieur de Roquelaure*, for *Gascogne*, and with him *De Salez* for *Languedoc* and *Tholouse*, where he is receiued of his father with much content and ioy, not that hee was contented to see his sonne professe these *Militarie* courses (which onely affords the smoake of Honour, and not the solidity of profit) but rather that hee exceedingly reioyced to see him returne therfrom; and from whence, if he cannot hope that his requests will solely diuert him, yet he is resolu'd and assured that his Commands both will and shall. To which end, (as any humour is soonest subiect to be expelled and defaced by its contrary) so the old *Councillor*, hauing as much *Iudgement* and *Providence* in his head, as his sonne hath *Vanity* in his thoughts, and *Rashnes* in his resolutions, doth both request, and command him to leaue the War for Peace, Armes for Loue, the Camp

for the Citie, and his Captaine for a Wife, and so no longer to march and fight vnder the Banners of *Mars* and *Bellona*, but vnder the Stabdarts of *Venus* and *Hymenens*; to which effect, he proffers him the choyce of many rich and faire yong *Gentlewomen* of the Countrey to his wife; but especially (and with farre more earnestnes then any other) to an exceeding rich match in the Citie, which was a yong *Gentlewoman* tearmed *La Frange*, being the onely child of *Monsieur de Clugny*, one of the most famous and richest *Presidents* of that *Court*, young of yeares, as being but sixteene, or seuteene, but withall deformed both in fauour and body, for she was of a browne and sowre complexion, and not onely a Dwarf in stature, but also exceedingly crooke-back'd, and yet beyond measure very amorous, and desirous of a Husband: onely the endowments of her minde most richly recompenced, and made satisfaction for the defects of her body: for she had an actiue and nimble wit, a sweet and sugred tongue, a rich *Memory*, and a powerfull and happy *Iudgement*, and was indeed an excellent Dauncer, and Singer, and withall a most perfect and exquisite Musician: But as yet *De Salez* warlike and generous resolution could not bee so soone made flexible, to embrace the motion of a wife, and so he returnes his deniall instead of his consent: but his wife old father *Argentier*, being therefore the more curious of his sonne *De Salez* his prosperity and welfare, because he apparantly saw he no way regarded, but euery way neglected it himselfe; (his sonnes exorbitant resolution notwithstanding) although hee knew that *Madamoyse La Frange* had many noble *Suitors*, who sought her in mariage: yet relying vpon his ancient acquaintance

tance and familiaritie with the *President de Clugny*, as also that that daughter of his, and this his Sonne were of both parties their onely children. He taking time at aduantage, breakes with him about this match: whereunto *De Clugny* hearkens rather with delight then distast: for if there were any disparitie in the dignitie of their Offices, he well knowes, that *Argentiers* blood and wealth did at least equallize, if not exceed his; or if hee conceited any scruple in his thoughts, which impugned or imposed it, it was onely because *De Salez* was a *Souldier*, and not a *Lawyer*, and consequently delighted to vse his sword before his Pen, and to weare and preferre a Scarlet cloke before a Blacke. But then againe, these repugnant and auerse reasons were as soone buried, as borne, and defaced, as conceived and ingrauen in him; when hee considered that he himselfe in his adolescency was of the same humour and inclination, and therefore that *Experience* had made him a *President* to himselfe, that *Time* was both the reformer and refiner of manners, and that (in all well borne and well bred spirits) the *Precepts* of a father, and the sweet conuersation and counsell of a wife, had power to metamorphose the conditions of a young husband; whereupon the old fathers often meet and consult hereon, and so being fully agreed on all conditions, they likewise appoynt a solemne meeting for their children, but the effect and issue of this their enteruiew, will not corespond and answer their desires.

La Frange (as we haue formerly sayd) being deformed and crook-backt, was no way agreeable but displeasing to *De Salez*; but he being a tall, and neat timbered *Gentleman*, of a faire and feminine complexion,

she instantly most tenderly affected, and dearly loued him. In a word, I must request the curiositie of the Reader briefly to be informed and aduertised, that as shee beheld him with the eyes of *Loue* and *Desire*, so did he her with those of *contempt* and *disdain*, shee building castles of content in the aire of her thoughts and hopes, that *Heauen* would make him her husband, and hee raising both her and her memory out of that of his contemplations, vowing that *Earth* should neuer make her his wife. Thus though the Parents haue already shut vp the Contract, yet their children shall neuer liue to celebrate the *Nuptials*, for we shal see diuersity of *tragicall accidents* which are prouiding, and almost ready to oppose and impugne it. *Parents* think to be the causes, but *God* will still bee the *Antbour* of Mariages: for if his sacred and diuine *Maiesty* make them not first in *Heauen*, they shall neuer see them solemnized nor consummated on *Earth*.

And heere, to make an orderly progression in this *History*, the Reader must likewise vnderstand, that of all other of *La Franges* Suitors, none sought her with so much importunity and impatiency, as the *Baron* of *Vaumartin*, (whose chiefeest house and lands lay betwixt *Aigue-mortes* and *Narbone*) a Nobleman of some thirtie yeares old, who (like many others of his stampe and ranke) had spent the greatest part of his youth and meanes in *Paris*, in laciuiously debaushing and reuelling with the *Parisian* Ladics and Dames: so that the vanitie of his pleasures and expenses making his lands fly away piece-meale, and the deuasting and fall of his trees and woods, making the rest of his Mannors shake, (an example and president for all other debaushed *Gallants* to obserue and beware of) he leaues

leauces *Paris* with curses, and his bitter-sweet sinnes with repentance; and so (to repayre his errours, and to redeeme his lost time, and decayed Estate) he comes home to *Languedoc*, where hearing in *Tbolouse* of the *President de Clugny's* great wealth, which he must solely leau to his onely childe and daughter *La Frange*, who was now marriageable, he resolues to set all his other businesse and designs apart, and so to lay siege and seeke her of her father & selfe in marriage. Now to take the better direction, and obseruation of this *History*, we must likewise vnderstand, that this *Baron of Vanmartin* was of a swart complexion, a dwarfe of stature, and euery way as crook-backt as *La Frange*, which the more flattered him in his hopes, and egged him on in his pursute, hoping indeed (though with as much *Vanitie as Ignorance*) that this their corporall resemblance would the sooner induce and draw her to affect him: but his *Arithmatique*, or rather his *Iudgement* will deceiue him: for it is conformitie of *Humors* and *Inclinations*, and not of faces and bodies, which breeds and inflames a *sympathy* in affections. But he is resolute in his research, and so better louing the fathers wealth, then the daughters *Beautie*, he wel assisted and followed (with a traine and equipage worthy of his birth, and her merits) first seekes the daughter of her father, then her selfe of her selfe. As for the old *President de Clugny*, hee hath heard of his debaushed pranks and ryots in *Paris*, & therefore vowes that his wealth gotten with wisdom, and purchased with prouidence, study and care in his *Age*, shall neuer pay for the obseane pleasures, and vitious prodigalities of his *Youth*: and so with many verball complements (resolving that he shall neuer triumph in the conquest

conquest of his daughter) he in generall tearmes puts him off. As for *La Frange* her selfe, the sweetnesse of *De Salez* complexion, and personage, is so deeply imprinted in her heart, and thoughts, that it is impossible for *Vaumartin* to find any admittance or entrance; for shee speaks of none but *de Salez*, thinks of none but of *de Salez*, nor wisheth her selfe with any but with *de Salez*. Againe, she wonders at *Vaumartins* simplicitie, in seeking her for his wife: for if she hate deformitie in her selfe, how is it either likely or possible, that shee can loue it in her husband? No, no; though *de Salez* will not loue *La Frange*, yet *La Frange* must and will loue *de Salez*, and none but him; and therefore sith *de Salez* his sweete feature is a pearle in her eye, needs must *Vaumartin* be an eye-sore to her; yea, and if modesty will permit mee to speake or write an immodest truth, her heart doth so burne and flame in loue to *de Salez*, that both day and night, shee many times with sighes, sometimes with teares, wisheth her selfe eyther impayled in his armes, or he encloystred in hers. Now by this time *Vaumartin* hath full notice and aduertisement of her affection deuoted to none but to *de Salez*, as also of his sleighting and disdaining her: Whereupon encouraged by this, and disheartened by that, he leaues no cost, care, or curiositie (eyther in gifts, dauncing, musicke, or bankers vnattempted): to crowne his wants, rather then his desires and pleasures, with this though deformed, yet rich heire *La Frange*: so leauing him to his vaine sute in courting her, speake we a little of *de Salez*, that sith he will not affect *La Frange*, wee may yet obserue and discover, which way he intends to shape the course of his affections and resolutions.

For albeit he had formerly addicted himselfe and resolutions to be a professed Souldier, yet *Peace* calling him home now to *Pleasure*, and that to *effeminacy* (a fatall and dangerous *vice*, which (in the iniquity of these our times and depraued manners) not only most insensibly creepes into common Souldiers and Commanders, but also into all Armies, and into many *Estates* and *kingdoms*, still to the disparagement of their glory, and sometime to the price of their ruine, and perill of their subuersion) he began to let his Colours hang dustie, and his Pike and Partizan rustie by the walls, and to frequent the company of Ladies, which the old Counsellor his father obserues with ioy, hoping that in the end, hee shall draw him to affect and marry *La Frange*: but these hopes of his will prooue vaine, and this his ioy will soone bee exchanged into sorrow, and metamorphosed into affliction and misery: for that his *sonne* is partly resolved to marry, tis true, but as true it is, that he is fully resolved neuer to loue, much lesse to marry *La Frange*.

Now wee must vnderstand, that in *Thelouse* there dwelt a Marchant of Silkes (or as we in *England* say, a Silk-man) tearmed *Monsieur de Soulange*, rather reputed rich of others, then knowen so of himselfe; and yet being an old Widower, to the end the sooner to get him a new wife, hee puts a good face on his estate, and maintaines himselfe, family, and house, with great pompe and expences, hauing no sonne, but three fayre daughters, all marriageable; and yet (out of *ambition* & in emulation of the *Gentry*) seuerally knowen and styled by their titles, not by their names, as *Mesdemoyselles de Marfy*, *La pre Verte*, and *La Hay*, all famous for their beauties, and indeed for the purenesse

and excellency thereof iustly repared and held the prime Birds of the citie, and yet the yongest of them *La Hay* was the *Phoenix* of all the three: for shee was so sweetly fayre, and fayrely sweet of complexion, as shee drew all eyes to doe homage to hers: so as it was almost impossible for any man to looke on her without louing her; or to gaze on her, without desiring her; for her body was so straight and slender, and the roses of her cheekes so deliciously gracing the lillies, and the lillies the roses; that the greatest Gallant cyther of the Citie or Country, held himselfe not only happy, but honoured with the felicity of her presence and company. But in one word; to giue these three sisters their true characters, *de Marfy*, and *la Pre-verte*, were far more vertuous then *La Hay*, though *La Hay* were farre fayrer then they: for as *Religion* and *Piety* was their chiefeest delight and exercise, as more desirous to embellish their soules then their bodies; so wanton pleasure and vaine laciuioufnesse was hers, as rather delighting to please and adorne her body then her soule, they being more vertuous then fayre, shee more fayre then vertuous; different inclinations and resolutions; these as happy and blessed, as hers wretched and impious; their actions might haue been a President, yea a Pilot to haue conducted her same as well to the Temple of *Honor*, as to the harbour of immortall glory, and of glorious immortality: but shee vowes she wil proue a presidēt to her self, & her pleasure shalbe a Pilot to her will, although she misse the *Temple of Honour*, to find out that of beastly concupiscence, and the harbor of immortall glory, to suffer shipwrack vpon the shelues of inglorious infamy, and the rocks of infamous perdition.

To this *Monsieur de Soulanges* house, the beauties of his three daughters, but especially that of *La Hay*, and (withall) her pleasing and tractable affabilitie, entices many young *Gentlemen*, and the eminentst Citizens, who there passe their time in courting and conuerling, in dauncing, singing, and the like, whereunto the Youth of *Fraunce* more then any other people of the world, are most licenciously addicted; and as things are best discerned and distinguished by their contraries, so the vertues of *De Marfy*, and *La Pre-verte* were made more apparant by *La Hayes* vices; and her lust and whoredomes was more palpably notorious in their chastitie. O that so sweet a creature should be subiect to so foule a sin; and that Beauty the best gift, (and as I may say the gold) of *Nature*, should be thus vilified & polluted with the beastly pleasures of carnall concupiscence, and obseane sensuality! for, Ay me, I write it with as much griefe to my selfe, as shame to her, she was too prodigall of her fauours: for shee imparted them liberally vnto some for loue, but vnto most for money, not caring to whom shee prostituted her body, so they filled her purse, thereby to support her pride, and maintaine the excesse and vanity of her hauey, and yet she was so subrill and cautious therein, that althoug shee were a professed *Courtisan*, she would neuertheless publicly seeme a pure and vnspotted *Virgin*; and the better to fortifie her fame, and to make the reputation of her *Chastite* passe currant with the world, shee would sweare all those to conceale her fauours, on whomsoever she imparted and bestowed them: but if this lasciuious subtiltie of hers haue power to blear the eyes of the world, how can this her beastly sinne of fornication

be vnscene of *God*, when the windowes walles, and beames of her chamber, yea, her very bed whereon she hath acted her whoredomes, shall one day giue in *Evidence*, and serue as witnesses against her; yea, and be petitioners on earth, that *God* will requite and reward them with *Vengeance* and confusion from *Heauen*.

Now, among the rest of those deboshed *Gentlemen*, who deuoted their laciuious seruice, and sacrificed their fond affections to *La Hays* beautie; in comes our *De Salex* to inroule himsef one: who, feasting and surfeiting his eyes, on the delicacies of her fresh and sweet complexion; leaues his owne fathers house, to frequent hers, yea his desires are so lustfully inflam'd with her beautie, as with his best art and policie, he lies close siege to her chastitie; and with many gifts, requests and oathes, seekes to endeere her to his desires and pleasure: But see the subtiltie of this laciuious young *Courtisan*, for knowing *de Salex* deeply in loue with her, and to bee the onely child of his father, and he one of the richest Councillors of *T bolouse*; she conceiues a plot in her head, to goe a fishing to make him her husband; and so beares her selfe wonderfull modest and coye, casting a cloake and vaile of chastitie ore her vnchast desires and actions, as if she were now a virgin, yea a *Saint* to him; though heretofore she had many times played the *Strumpet* with others: but her deniall doth rather inflame, then quench the fire of his lust, so as making many assaults, to raze downe the defences of her refusall, that he may enter and take possession of her heart and fauour: his best *Art* and *Oratory* prooues vaine, for she outwardly retires her affection, therby
the

the better, inwardly to aduance and finish her purposes : so this repulse of hers makes him hang his head, and become pensive and melancholie ; the true signes and symptomes of a foolish and fantastick lover as in effect we shall shortly see *de Salex* will proove himselfe : for the colder she is in affection to him, the hotter is he in lust with her ; forgetting the warres, yea, his discretion, himselfe, and all to crowne his desires in inioying her : the which she well observing begins to triumph in her good fortune, as thinking him already fairely come to the hooke, and so hopes that if the line of his *folly* and her good *fortune* and *wis* hold, she will soone make him her husband, and her selfe his wife : For having formerly met with many knaves in others, she now begins to rest confident either to find, or make a foole of him ; thereby to serue as a vayne to ouerwaile her whoredomes : He pleads hard to her for loue, she replies it is impossible to find loue in lust, he vowes he will die her servant, she sweares she will neuer line his strumpet : He protesteth that she shall share of his estate, she tells him plainly that she had rather liue a poore wife, then die a rich *Courtesan* ; Hee replies that he adores her beautie, she answers, that she knowes no other, but that he onely seeks to prophane and defile it : And here with more facilitie to make him swallow, either a Gull, a Gudgeon, or both ; she by stealth permits him to cull some kisses, as well from the cherries of her lippes, as the roses of her cheeks : and in the Interim like an hypocriticall and dissembling queane, reads him many lectures on the purenesse of *Chastitie*, and the foulness of *Lust*, on the blessednesse of *Marriage*, and the wretched estate of *Fornication* : Pro-

phane and impious giglet, whole speeches are perfumed with *Verse*, and yet her actions stincke, and are poluted and infected with *Vice*: defembling *Syreen*, who casts foorth bitter sweet inchanting tunes and charms to please the sence, and yet purposely to poyson the soule, pilles of worme-wood candid in sugar, honny to the pallate, but gall to the stomacke: A fatall rocke whereon many inconsiderate and deboshed young *Gentlemen* haue vnfortunately suffered shipwracke, a wretched *Gulph* and *Laborinth* which contains all varietie of endlesse miseries and calamities, whereunto whosoeuer enters with pleasure, is sure to retire with teares, curses, and repentance; A plague sent vs from heauen in our age, for a iust guerdon and recompense of the finnes and folly of our youth. And into this intricate Laborinth and bottomlesse Gulph of miserie and calamitie, is our rash and lustfull yong *Gallant*, cheerefully entering and steering his course, without either the Starre of hope, or Compasse of felicitie and safetie, bearing out toppe and toppe Gallitt, yea (as I may say) with all the sayles of his folly bearing; and with the flagge Ensigne and Pendants of his obscene and laciuous desires, playing and dallying in the Aire of *La Hayes* fatall and infectious beautie; which hath so solely surpris'd his iudgement, captiuatied his thoughts, and eclipsed his deferetion, as in her absence and preface he extolls aswell her *Vertues* as her beautie to the Skies: vowing that shee is so faire a *Nymph*, and so pure a *Virgine*, as she deserves rather to be his wife, then his Strumpet, or rather not his strumpet but his wife: And so two moneths being past since he first frequented her, and sought to seduce and obtaine her to his laciuous desires;

fires, and seeing (desembling queane as she is) that therein she bore her selfe infinitely chaste and modest, and that it was impossible for him to obserue or remarke any other inclination or testimonie, either in her word or carriage, his wits are so besotted and intangled in the fetters of her beautie, that he prestres her sweet feature and complexion, a thousand times before *La Franges*, deformed; and vowes that he had rather die *La Hayes* slaue, then euër liue to be *La Franges* husband: But this folly of his in the end shall cost him deare, and so lead him to another, farre more vnnaturall, and as I may iustly say, damnable: But we must proceed orderly in this History, and do therefore reserue that part till anon.

By this time the sic subriltie, and seeming chaste behauour of *La Hay*, hath acted wonders in *De Salez* heart, so as she now hopes confidently, and shortly to play her priske in surprising him, for he is extremely amorous besotted, and as I may say, drunke with the loue of her selfe and beautie: so on a Sunday, as she returned from *Pessres*, he repaires to her fathers house to see her, who he finds in her chamber alone, waiting and attending him: hauing purposely dighted her selfe in a rich new Gowne and Petticote, and trimmed and adorned her selfe in her gayest & most curious attire, thereby with more ease and facilitie to draw him to her lure: So as her beautie being both seconded, and graced by her apparell, she so rauished his heart, and delighted his senses, as he cannot refrain from kissing her; but this hony of her lippes, will in the end proue poyson to his heart: And heere againe he layes close siege to her chastitie, but still she giues him the repulse and refusall, as if she were a

Diana,

Diana, and no *Venus*: He vowes he doth affect, and will euer honour her; And she, th^t if he honour her, will still affect him: In the the way of *Loue*, quoth he, I am wholly yours; and quoth she, in that *Honour*. I will not be mine owne but yours: I will quoth hee in all affection both liue and die your seruant; and replies she, In all chastity, I will liue to die your handmaid: He affirms, he cannot be more hers in heart, then he is; nor I quoth she, lesse yours in lust, then I am: It is quoth he my *Loue* which makes me report so much; and quoth she it is my *Fear* which makes me affirme no lesse: Why, quoth he, should my loue procure your *Fear*, My fear, quoth she, is wholly ingendred and deriued from your lust, but not from your *Loue*: I pray expresse your selfe, quoth he; she replies, my blushes may, but my tongue dares not: Quoth he, did your affection equalize mine: *La Hay* would accept of *De Salex*, and not refuse him, Nay quoth she, did *De Salex* know how infinite mine exceeds his, he would not refuse *La Hay*, but accept of her: Why quoth he, *de Salex* desires none but *La Hay*, Nor quoth she, *La Hay* any in the world but *de Salex*: Whereupon *de Salex* being prouoked with his owne lust, and animated and encouraged by her sweet speeches, he very ioyfully (yet falsely) flattering himselfe with the conquest of her fauour and consent, shuts the doore, and like a most laciuious and disolute Gentleman, takes her in his armes, and striues to conuey her to the bed; resoluing there to enrich himselfe with more then kisses, yea, to reape the fruit of his beastly pleasures and o'scane and brutish desires; but his hopes shall deceiue him: For although *La Hay* be a Courtisan in heart, yet she will not be so in tongue,

tongue, especially now, where to get her selfe a rich husband, it behooues her to play her prife in *Chastity*, as if she were as vertuous, as faire, and as chaste as louely; Wherefore exclaiming, and storming at this his laciuious attempt and enterprife, leuelled at the defloration and shipwracke of her *Honour*, she with a violent power, and an enraged violence, vnskrewes her selfe forth his armes, and with a world of hypocriticall sighes and teares, flies to his Ponyard, which he had throwne on the table, and vnsheathing it, vowes that she will be a second *Lucretia*, and that if she cannot kill him before he haue defiled and defloured her, yet that she will assuredly murther her selfe after; because she is fully resolved, that her chastitie shall outliue her, not she her chastitie; A religious and *Honourable* resolution of hers, if it had proceeded from a chaste and sanctified heart, but alas, nothing lesse; for she speakes it out of subtiltie, not out of *Vertue*, out of *Politicie*, no way out of *Pietie*: *de Salex* by this time hauing wholly lost his iudgement in the sweet and roseat garden of her delicious complexion; vowes that he is now as deeply in loue with her chastity, as formerly with her beauty. When seeking to appease her *Choller*, and to pacifie her *Indignation*, as also to giue truce to his owne thoughts, and content to his desires; he sweares he is so farre from intending her any dishonour, as he is resolved to doe her all the honour of the world: Yea so farre, as if she please, he is ready to accept her for his wite, protesting, that of all the maydens of the world, he is desirous to be husband to none but her selfe, and that the fault shall be hers, if he make not his words deeds. *La Hay* hauing her thoughts tickled with delight, to heare the plea-

fant melody of these his sugred speeches, doth there-
at presently bury her sighes, and drievp her teares :
when throwing away the ponyard, and making him a
most respectfull courtisie, and gratefull reuerence, shee
with extended armes runnes to him, and hangs about
his necke, vowing that she loues no man in the world
but himselfe; and in consenting to be her husband, she
wil till death yeeld, not only to be his faithfull wife in
attending his pleasures, but his obseruant handmaid,
to receiue and obey his commaunds : and so they in-
terchangeably greet each other with thanks & kisses.
But yet shee knowing that his father *Argentier* was
both rich and eminent, and her owne poore and of a
farre inferiour ranke, shee is so politike and subtile in
the managing of this her affection, as she is resolu-
ed to make sure worke, and to doe nothing by halfe : so
as knowing that words are but wind, and what *de Sa-
lex* promisseth her now, he may either forget or deny
to morrow, she intends to catch at opportunities fore-
locke, and so with a sweet and ingenious insinuation,
drawes him to giue her a *Diamond* Ring in token of
marriage, and she in exchange returnes him a small
gold bracelet, which shee wore vpon her arme next
her heart. And yet againe considering, that his father
would very difficultly (or neuer) be drawn to consent
to this match, she can giue no true content to her de-
sires, nor satisfaction to her feare, before shee haue v-
nited and linked him to her, in a more stricter and fir-
mer bond of assurance; when not onely feasting, but
as it were sursetting him with varietie of kisses, shee
bethinks her selfe of a *policy*, as worthy of her wit for
attempting, as of his folly for performing : for dire-
cting him her speech (which shee accompanied with
many

many amorous, yet dissembling smiles) she told him she would futuely exceed him in constancy, and now outbraue him in affection; when taking pen and paper, she writes him a faire promise, and firme assurance of her selfe vnto him (in the manner of a Contract) and to make it the more powerfull and authentically, subscribes her name and signe to it, and betwixt sighs and blushing, she deliuiers it him; no way doubting, but rather assuring her selfe, that he would requite her with the like curtesie and obligation, as indeed the euent answereth her desires and wishes: For *de Salex* hauing now no power left him to see by his owne eyes, I meane, by those of his iudgement, but only by these of his intemperat passion, and passionat affection, he is so far from descrying (much lesse from suspecting) her policy, as very simply and sottishly he attributes it to the seruency of her affection, the which he interprets and entertaines, I know not whether with more ioy, or delectation; and so vowing not to dye her debtor for *Courtesie*, he very rashly, and inconsiderately writes another to the same effect, and flies so farre from wit or discretion, as to shew himselfe her superiour in affection, as well as in sex, he purposely cuts his finger, and so firmes his name thereunto with his owne blood, and then with a million of kisses deliuiers it her, vowing that her pleasure shall be his law in the accomplishing thereof: only he prayes her for a time to be secret and silent heerein, for that he feares he shall hardly draw his Father to consent hereunto, the which she very courteously graunts him: and so he triumphing in her beauty, and she in his wealth, he in her youth, and she in his simplicity, they for that time part, not doubting but they shall shortly reape the

fruits of their matrimoniall desires and wishes, for till then, she sweares (though with an equiuocating reservation to forswear her selfe) she will liue a most pure and vnspotted Virgin, and that as the least of her affection and courtesie towards him, shall be smiles, so the most shall be kisses.

But this (affection or rather folly) of *De Salex*, in contracting himselfe to *La Hay*, is not so secretly borne, but as her former vnchastitie was a generall argument of talke to the whole citie of *Tholouse*: so now this of her subtilty and good fortune, is thar of its vniuersall pratling and admiration, occasioned and redoubled by the opposite considerations of *Argentiers* knowen wealth, and *de Soulanges* supposed poerty; and againe of *de Salex* supposed chastity, and of *de la Hayes* notoriously knowen whoredoms. And as *Fame* is still so tatling a goddesse, that euents and accidents of this nature can hardly be concealed, and difficultie suppressed and smothered: so by this time contrary to the expectations and hopes of our two young Louers, the old Councillor *Argentier* hath notice of this vnlooked-for newes, and of this vnwished for familiaritie betwixt his sonne, and that strumpet *La Hay*, when considering the great opposition betwixt *de Elugny's* Nobilitie and wealth, and *de Soulanges* meane extraction and pouertie; as also by a true and vncontroleable *Antithises*, comparing the foule and enormous vices of *La Hay* with the sweet and resplendant vertues of *La Frange*; he (as much disdayning that match, as desiring this for his sonne, very hastily sends for him into the Arbor, where purposefully attending him, he with lightning in his lookes, and thunder in his speeches, layes before him the simplicity,

city, and the sottishnesse of his resolution, in preferring *La Hay* before *La Frange*, a strumpet before a virgin, and a Pedlers brat, before a rich gentlemans only daughter and heyre, shewes him the infamy of the first, and the glory of the last march; there his vnayoydable milery, here his assured happinesse; in the first his vtter ruine and shipwracke, and in the last, his infallible prosperity and felicity: and so intermixing threats with reares, with a passionate paternall affection, he endeaouoreth to perswade him to leaue *La Hay*, and to marry *La Frange*; or if not, hee vowes and sweares wholly to disinherit him, and from thenceforth neuer repure or esteeme him for his sonne. But *de Salex* his foolish vanity, and vaine affection in himselfe towards his new contracted Loue *La Hay*, is so great, and consequently his filiall obedience to his father so small, as notwithstanding this his wholesome aduise and counsell, he is still resolute and constant to preferre *La Hay* before *La Frange*, the beauty of the one, before the deformity of the other, his owne content before his fathers, and *Saulanges* estate and byrth before the great wealth and noble extraction of *De Clugny*: but this rashnes, indiscretion, and ingratitude of his will cost him deare.

Now if *Argentier* haue perfect intelligence and curious notice of his sonns familiarity with that faire yet lewd Courtezan *La Hay*, no lesse hath *la Frange*, who poore soule is so deeply enamoured of *de Salex*, as the very first newes & conceyt, that another should enioy him, and not her selfe, for very grieve and sorrow, shee seemes to drowne her selfe in the deluge of her teares. His father is chollerick therat, she mournfull, he incensed, she afflicted, he enraged, and the per-

plexed and tormented; his passions & anger proceeds from suspicion, that he shall so soone find a daughter in law in *la Hay*; her sighes and teares from feare, that she shall so soone loose her Loue, though not her Louer, his sonne *de Salex*. Againe, the argument of his choller, is *la Hayes* vnchastitie and pouertie, and the cause of her disconsolation, *de Salex* his wealth and vertues: likewise she sees that *Argentier* hath no reason to hope, that his sonne will marry her selfe, such is her deformitie; and againe, that he hath all the reasons of the world, as well to doubt, as feare, that hee will wed *la Hay*, such is her beauty: But sith *de Salex* will beare no more respect to his father, nor affection to *la Frange*, leaue we therefore his father *Argentiers* passions, and *la Franges* perplexities, to bee appeased and qualified by *Time*, or rather by *God*, the Authour and giuer of *Time*, who out of his all-seeing prouidence and sacred pleasure, onely knowes in Heauen, how best to dispose and manage the actions of earth; and so come wee to other vnexpected occurrents and euents, which like so many enteriecting, and interuening poynts, are contained within the circumference of this *History*.

I haue so long insisted on the affections of *de Salex* and *la Hay*, as but to the iudicious and temperat Reader it would seeme to appeare, that the *Baron* of *Vau-martin* hath wholly forgotten to remember his to his Lady *La Frange*. But to put that doubt out of question, and this question out of doubt, we shal see him returne too too soone, to act a part not so religious and honourable, as bloody, vpon the *Theatre* of this *History*: For by this time both his creditors & his debts are growen so clamorous, and his reputation & lands so

so neere forfeited, 'for want of disingaging, as to secure the one, and provide for the other, he knowes no other inuention nor meanes, but to gaine *La Frange* to his wife: when, as it were, prouoked and precipitated on by the necessity of this exigent, his thoughts leane heauen to fly to hell, and consequently fly from *God* to *Sathan*, to consult how either by the bye, or the mayne hee may obtaine her; yea, though with the perill and hazard of his owne life, to cut off theirs, who seeke therein to preuent his desires and designs. In which hellish ratiocynation, he as deuoyd of *Reason*, as that is exempt either of *Grace* or *Pietie*, thus reasoneth with himselfe: *De Clugny* hates me, for seeking to marry his daughter, and that time may remedy for me; but which is worst of all, shee loues *De Salex*, and seekes and desires to marry him, and this I must remedy in time, if I euer expect to obtaine or enioy her; and so resolues to make him away: but is as yet irresolute how to perpetrate, and in what manner to finish so execrable a businesse. But this is not onely the voyce of his malice, but the sentence of his reuenge; that *De Salex* must die: wretched *Vaumartin*, vnworthy to beare the name of a man, much lesse of a *Baron*, but least of all of a *Christian*, in that because *De Salex* hates *La Frange*, & she loues him, that therefore thou wilt not loue but hate him; or because shee loues him, and not thy selfe, that therefore thou wilt kill him, that she may loue thee. See, see, rash and inconsiderate *Nobleman*, how treacherously the Deuill hath hood-wink'd, yea inueigled thy iudgment, & besotted thy senses, to kill onethat loues thee, to kill I say, a *Gentleman* who hath not offended thee, but is e- uery way thy friend, no way thine enemy: or if thou
thinke

thinke it wifdome, that coueroufneffe must redeeme thy former prodigality, *alas, alas*, canst thou yet be so cruell, to thinke it eyther lawfull or religious, that future murther should either occasion or authorize it: But the Deuill hath so farre preuayled with his impious resolutions, that againe he resolues, *De Salex* must dye: and yet thou thinkest poyson as vnworthy of him, as he is worthy of thy sword; so had thy last resolution been answerable to thy first, assure thy selfe thou hadst made thy selfe more happy, and not so miserable: for as poysoning was the inuention of the deuill, and is practised by none but his agents; so this dishonourable poynt of honour to fight Duels, was neuer instituted by God, nor professed by those who really professe his Gospel: yea, it is not onely truly to dishonour God, in seeking falsely to preserve our owne Honour and reputation, but wee assuredly stab at the Maiesie of the Creator, in seeking to deface man his creature; and to vie but a word, as it is repugnant both to Nature and Grace, so though it begin in the heat of passion and pleasure, it many times terminates in Repentance, but still in true Infamy and misery.

But *Vaunmartins* faith being so strong with *Sathan*, and so weake with his Saniour, he will not take a law from Religion to giue to his Envy, but rather takes one from his Envy to giue to his Religion; and so very prophanely and rashly by his Lackey *La Rose*, sends *De Saléx* this Challenge:

IF thou seeke the cause of my malice, thou mayest find it in the Lady *La Franges* affection to thee, and hatred to my selfe: wherefore hold it not strange, that I now command my pen to inuite thee and thy sword to mee to morrow

morrow

morrow on horse-backe without Seconds, 'twixt five and sixe in the morning, behind the Iacobins garden. Loue and Valour thou knowest, are neuer capable of much expostulation; as desirous rather to be tryed in action, then scene in words. Could that sweete Lady, (who will not bee mine, because thou art hers) haue affected me more, or thee lesse, wee might haue prooued as true friends, as now our reputations coniure vs eyther so line or dye, Honourable Enemies.

VAVMARTIN.

De Salex hauing receiued and read this Challenge, doth not a little wonder at the *Baron* of *Vaumartins* strange passion and resolution, in sending it him, especially, sith he knowes that the motiues and grounds of his malice were so vniust and friuolous: so, how to answere him, as yet he knowes nor; for as his Generositie one way inuities him to fight, so his discretion another way perswades him from it: But considering the poore esteeme he makes either of the Lady *La Frange*, or her affection, thinking it folly to fight without cause, and to hazard his life without reason, hee calls for pen and paper, and as a wise, yet valiant Gentleman, by his owne Lackey, returns the *Baron* of *Vaumartin* this answer:

I *Haue scene many Challenges, but none of the Nature of thine now sent mee: for to write thee the truth, the grounds and foundations thereof are vniust, false, or both: for bring but the eyes of thy Iudgment, and not of thy passion, to bee Iudge and Vmpier betwixt vs, and thou shalt both see and finde, that I not onely disclaime the Lady La Franges affection, but her selfe; sith I appertaine to another,*

sher, and shee shall neuer to mee. I heere shew thee my loue through this true Prospectiue of my heart, which if it will not satisfie thy malice, then know that my weake Valour is neither capable nor desirous of further expostulation, then that my Sword is as willing to bring thee deedes, as thy Pen was to send mee words: for either single, or with Second, either on foot or horseback, I will still be ready to giue reason to those, who will nor relish, nor receiue any but their owne: and in this resolution of mine, I know I shall either liue with Reputation, or dye with Honour.

- DE SALEZ.

Vaumartin hauing receiued and perused this letter of refusall from *De Salez*, hee out of the heat of his passion, and height of his folly, reputes it rather to cowardise, then discretion in him; and so his courage and reuenge the more insulting and inflam'd thereat, hee bending his browes (as if Contempt and Enny fate wreath'd in the furrowes therof) very speedily againe returnes him his Lackey, with this rash answer:

THy Answer giues mee no satisfaction, sith I know that to deny thy affection to the Lady la Frange, is to deny the light of the Sunne in his brightest and hottest Meridian; neither are the grounds or foundations of my Challenge eyther vniust or false, as thou in thy false Prospectiue endeanourest to make mee see or belicue: for being ignorant who is thy Mistris, I know thou resoluest to make no Lady of the world thy wife but La Frange, so as I cannot rightly define whether thy proceeding with me be more subtil or malicious, or to what end thou shouldst attempt the one, or practise the other towards me, vlesse out of a premeditated resolution and purpose, thereby to make thy glory

glory the more apparent and conspicuous in my shame :
 Wherefore sith thy friendship is false to me , I must , say I
 will see if thy valour will proove true to thy selfe , and whe-
 ther the effects of thy Sword be as great in substance , as the
 vanity of thy Pen depayntes them , in shew and ostentation :
 So my Challenge is still my Resolution , and the perfor-
 mance thereof must bee thine , except thou resolve to live
 with as much Infamy , as the conclusion of : thy Letter pro-
 miseth thou art ready to dye with reputation and Ho-
 nour.

VAVMARTIN.

De Salex having receiued and runne over this Let-
 ter, and seeing that *Vaumartin* was still wilfull and re-
 solute to fight, thinks that he should degenerat from
 himselfe, his Blood, and Profession, if he did not now
 accept and answere this his Challenge : wherefore
 calling for *Vaumartins* Lackey , he rounds him thus
 in his care, *Tell thy Master, that if I live, I will not fayle
 to breake fast with him timely in the morning, according to
 his expectation.* Thus we see these two inconsiderate
 Gentlemen agreed, their match concluded, & nothing
 but the night to hinder them from fighting, as if their
 glory consisted in their shame, and as if *Nature* had
 neuer taught them how to preserve their lues, nor
 Grace, their soules.

So the Morne peeping forth through the windows
 of *Heaven* , as soone as the *Sunne* with his glistering
 beames began to salute the woods and mountaines,
 our two resolute *Champions* brauely mounted with
 each his *Chirurgion*, are in the field at the assignd Ren-
 deuous, and first comes *Vaumartin*, and then immedi-
 ately *De Salex*, whē their *Chirurgions* performing the
 dutie and office of Seconds, being some hundred pa-
 ces

ces distant, they giue spurres to their Steeds, and so drawing their swords, swiftly part, like two flashes of lightning each towards other. At their first meeting, *de Salex* giues *Vaumartin* the first hurt in the right shoulder, and hee, *de Salex* another in requitall, in the right side of the neck: whē being both good *Canaliers*, (& well neere as equal in yeres as courages) they turne short, and then fall to it againe with brauery and resolution, when againe *Vaumartin* runs *de Salex* through his left arme of a deepe and wide wound, and he onely sleightly cuts his shirt vpon his ribbes, giuing him onely a raze or scarre, but as yet both free from any danger of death, so they mutually consent to breath: but their ambitions and courages of both sides, are so exasperated and inflamed, as although they are all bloody, yet this will not suffice: so they fall to it againe, and in this close *de Salex* his horse stumbles with him; whereat *Vaumartin* (though a dwarfe in stature, yet not in Valour and Policy) taking the aduantage of this accident, giues him first a licke ore his pate, and then rnnnes him at the short ribbes: but *de Salex* rayning vp his horse, prooued fauoutable to him; for by that meanes *Vaumartins* sword met and glaunced on a rib, without doing him any farther hurt. *De Salex* seeing the redoubling of his wounds, beginnes to redouble his courage, and disdaining thus to bee outbraued and beaten by a *Pygmy*, he lyes home at *Vaumartin*, and at their very next close, runnes him thorow the body, of a deepe and mortall wound, a little aboue his nauell: whereat his sword presently falles out of his hand to the ground, and hee immediately likewise from his horse starke dead, without hauing the grace or happinesse, either to call on, or to name

God.

God. O what pitie, what misery is it, that a *Christian* should dye like a beast, hauing neither power to pray, nor felicitie to repent. Thus we see the Challenger kill'd, and he who would haue murthered a stranger, murthered himselfe by a stranger: a Lesson to teach others to beware, by the *Tragicall* and mournfull end of this rash Nobleman. *De Salex* seeing *Vanmartin* dead, praiseth *God* for his victory; and so leauing his breathlesse corps to his sorrowfull *Chirurgion*, he gallops away to the next Village, where hee causeth his wounds to bee dressed, and from thence provides for his safetie.

All *Tholouse* rings and resounds of this disastorous and *Tragicall* accident: *De Clugny* is glad, that *De Salex* hath escaped death, yet sorrowfull that *Vanmartin* is kill'd, in respect hee feares hee vnderooke this quarrell for his daughter *La Franges* sake: who hearing that *De Salex*'s wounds are no way mortall, infinitely reioyceth, and triumpheth thereat, flattering her selfe (though with this false hope) that he affected her farre more dearer then he made shew of, or else that he would neuer haue fought with *Vanmartin* for her sake, nor haue kill'd him but for his owne. And thus, though humanitie made her grieue for *Vanmartins* death, yet that grieue of hers was as suddenly conuerted into ioy, when she saw he receiued it by the hand of *De Salex*, whom shee respected and affected more dearer then all the Gentlemen of the world. Now, as for his father *Argentier*, the life of his sonne likewise wiped off the remembrance of *Vanmartins* death, and yet it grieved him inwardly, that hee to whome hee gaue life, should giue death to another: and farre the more, in that this vnfortunate accident

must now enforce him to beg pardon from that graue Court of Parliament, for this murder perpetrated by his sonne, sith he had formerly so often pleaded for iustice against others, for the like crime and offence; But all these ioyes of *Argentier*, *De Clugny*, and his daughter *La Frange*, are nothing to those of *La Hay* for the life and victory of her deare *De Salez*: leaping as it were for meere content and pleasure, that shee should shortly see, and enioy him for her husband, and that God hath both reserued, and preserued him to crowne her with the sweetnesse of this desired felicitie.

Thus while *La Frange* and *La Hay* triumph and congratulate the returne of *De Salez*, so *Argentier* publickely, and *De Clugny* priuately, imploy there chiefest power, friends and authoritie, to procure his pardon first from the King, then from the *Parliament*, whereof they are two famous members. Which at last, (by the meanes and fauour of the *Duke of Ventadour*) they obtaine: So this murder of his, is remitted in Earth, but I feare me, will not be forgotten in *Heaven*; for though men be inconstant in their decrees, yet God will be firme and vpright, aswell in the distribution, as execution of his iudgements. Men as they are men may erre, but as they are *Christians* they should not; but God (either to please or displease them) neither can nor will.

De Salez no sooner hath escaped this danger, but forgetting his former follies, and his fathers aduise & house, he againe, in a manner voluntarily imprisoneth himself with his mistris *La Hay* in hers; wherat as his father stormes, so *De Clugny*, and *La Frange* bite the lip: hoping that this good office in procuring him his pardon

pardon, would more strictly haue vnited him to her selfe, and consequently sequestred him from *La Hay*; but nothing lesse, for he sings his old tune, and will rather run the hazard of his fathers displeasure, then leaue *La Hay* to take *La Frange*: whereat his father *Argentier* reneweth his choller, and reuiues his indignation against him, as desiring nothing so much in this life, as to see him married to *La Frange*, but he shall neuer liue to see it; for there are too many disastrous accidents preparing to crosse and preuent it:

Whiles these things happen in *Tholouse*, there be- tides an vnexpected and vnwished businesse, which must call away *Argentier* to *Paris*: For the Lords of the Priuie Councell of *France*, hauing receiued some informations and grieuances against the body of the Court of *Parliament* of *Tholouse*; commaund them speedily to send vp some Deputies to answer such matters as shall be objected against them: whereupon, the grauitie and wisdom of that Court, in obedience to their superiours, elect two *Presidents* and foure Counsellours to vndertake that journey and businesse among whom *De Clugny* is chosen for one of the *Presidents*, and *Argentier* for one of the Counsellours: as indeed their integritie and profound *Wisdom* and *Experience* had made them eminent in that Court. As for *de Clugny* at his importunate request (made to the Court) he was dispenced with, from that journey; by alleadging that his age and sicknesse made him altogether vnfit to vndertake it: but all the euasions and excuses, which *Argentier* could make, could not exempt him, but he must needs see *Paris*. But first, before his departure he had a long
and

and serious conference with *de Clugny*, how to effect the so long desired match of his sonne and daughter, the finishing whereof was referred till his returne from *Paris*, which sweet newes infinitely reioyced and delighted the young Ladie *La Frange*, and the immediate night before he was to take Coach, hee calls his sonne *de Salex* to him, and with a perswasive and powerfull speech, requested him in his absence to loue *La Frange*, which he in plaine tearmes protested and vowed to his father, he could not, then hee coniures him, neuer to marry *La Hay*, which likewise he would not grant; and to conclude, sith his father could not preuaile in the two former, he commanded him vpon his blessing, that he would neuer marry any wife whatsoever without his consent, the which indeed *de Salex* could not denie, but faithfully promised his father; yea, and bound it with an oath, yet still hoping, that it was as possible for him to draw his father to consent he should marry *La Hay*, as it was as impossible for his father euer to perswade him to marry *La Frange*: and so that night the father takes leaue of the sonne, and he the next morning of his father, wishing him a prosperous iourney, and a speedy returne: who suspecting, and fearing, that in his absence, contrary to his requests and prayers, his Sonne would only abandone *La Frange*, to frequent *La Hay*; he being ariued to the Citie of *Tours*, thought himselfe bound in Nature, aswell for his owne content, as his sonnes tranquillitie and prosperitie; againe, to signify him his mind in some few lines of aduise and counsell, and to send it him by the ordinary Carrier of *Tholouse*; which was then in that Citie, bound thither from *Paris*: his letter spake thus.

IT is out of a fatherly, & (as I may say) a religious care of thy good, that I now send thee these few ensuing lines, for thy Youth cannot see that which my Age knows, how many miseries are subject, to wait & attend on Vice, and how many blessings on Vertue; if La Frange be not faire, yet she is comely, not contemptible: but sith her defects of Nature are so richly recompensed with the Ornaments of Fortune, and the excellencies of Grace; why should thy affection preferre La Hay before her, who hath nothing but a painted face to oueruaile the deformitie of her other vices? If thou wilt leaue a Saint to marry a strumpet, then take La Hay, and forsake La Frange; but if thou forsake a strumpet to take a Saint, then marry La Frange and leaue La Hay, for look what difference there is betweene their births, thou shalt find ten times more betweene the chastitie of the one, and the leuitie of the other: If thou espouse the first, thou shalt find Content and Honour; if the second shame and repentance: for I know not whether La Frange will bring thee more happinesse, or La Hay misery. This letter shall serue as a witness betwixt God, my selfe, and thee; that if thou performe me not thy promise and oath, I will denie thee my blessing, and deprive thee of my lands.

ARGENTIER.

De Salex having receiued this his fathers letter in Tholouse, exceedingly grieues to see him disgrace his mistresse, by the scandalous name of a strumpet, which he knowes she is not, and therefore will neuer beleue it; yea, he vowes, that if it were any other in the world, who had offered him that intollerable affront, he would reuenge it, though with the price and perill of his life; La Hay perceiues this discontent and

alteration of mirth in him, but from what point of the Compass this wind proceeds, she neither knowes, nor as yet can conceiue: but withall, determineth to make the discouery thereof her greatest *Ambition*, and not her least *Care*; which she now well knowes it behooues her to doe, sith she finds *De Salex* lesse free, and more reserued and pensiue in her speeches then accostomed: But when in vaine she had hereunto vsed many smiles and fetches, loe heere falls out an vnlook't for accident, which bewrayes her the very pith and quintessence of the *Miserie*: For on a time, when he lay slumbering on the table, shee as accustomed, diuing into his pockets for sweet meats, or rather for gold (of both which, he many times went well furnished) she finds his fathers (aforesaid) letter, which she knew by the direction; and so flying into another chamber, and bolting the doore after her, she there reads it both with griefe and choller; when stung to the quicke, and bitten to the heart and gall, to see her reputation and *Honour* thus traduced and scandalized by the father of her pretended husband; she with teares and interiected sighes and grones, flies backe to *De Salex*, and holding the letter in her hand, like a dessembling and impious strumpet as she was, there shewes it him, takes *Heauen* and *Earth* to beare witness of her innocency, and of the irreparable and extreame wrong his father hath offered her, in seeking to ecclips the *Glory* of her chastitie, which she sweares she will beare pure and vnspotted, not onely to his bed, but to her owne graue. But *Alas, alas*, these are the effects and passions of dissimulation, not of truth, of her prophanenesse, not of her pietie, which time will make apparant to *De Salex*; though now her
beautie

beautie and teares be so predominate with his iudgement and folly, as he cannot, because he will not see it: So being still as constant in his sortishnesse, as she in her hypocrisie; he giues her many sweet kisses, and with a Catalogue of sugred words, seekes to appease and comfort her, whom he hath farre more reason to execrate and curse. But for her part, her heart is not so afflicted, for resembling her selfe, still her wits are her owne, and so remembering the conclusion of the letter, and fearing that *De Salex* his promise and oath to his father, might infringe and contradict his to her, she tels him, that her loue is so feruent and infinite towards him, as she can giue no intermission, nor truce to her teares, before he reueale her his oath and promise, which his fathers letter informed her he had formerly made him.

De Salex seeing himselfe put to so strict an exigent and push, doth both blush for shame, and againe looke pale for anger, when for a small time, irresolute how to beare himselfe in a matter of this different *Nature*, wherein he must either violate his obedience to his father, or infringe his fideliry and honour to his mistris; he at last (consenting with folly, not with discretion, and with *Vanitie*, not with *Iudgement*) doth so adore her beauty, and commiserate her teares, as he sortishly reueales her his oath, giuen his father (*Verbatim* as we haue formerly vnderstood it) adding withall, that she hath farre more reason to reioyce, then grieve hereat; That a little time shall cancell his said late promise and oath to his father, and confirme his former to her: For sweet *La Hay* (quoth he) come what come will, two moneths shall neuer passe, ere I marry thee, when sealing his speeches with many kisses,

our hypocriticall afflicted *Gentlewoman* is presently againe come to her selfe, and in all outward appearance, her discontents are remoued, her choller pacified, her teares exhaled, and her sighes euaporated and blowen away.

But all this is false, like her selfe, and trecherous like her beautie; For this letter of *Argentier* to his sonne, and his promise and oath to his father, hath acted such wonders in her heart, and imprinted such extrauagancies in her thoughts, as she cannot easily remoue or supplant it, nor difficultly forget or deface it, whatsoeuer she speake or make shew of to the contrary, for thus she reasoneth with her selfe: That her whoredomes are already reuealed to *Argentier*, and for any thing she knowes, may likewise be discouered to his sonne, how closely soeuer she either act or conceale them. That *La Franges* descent, wealth, and vertues, will in the end ouerprise and weigh downe her meane extraction, pouerty and beauty; and in the end, that the wisdom of the father, will infallibly triumph ore the folly of the sonne, except her policy interpose, and her vigilency preuent it; which to preuent and effect, she sees no other obstacle to her content, nor barre to her preferment, but only *La Frange*: for, quoth she, if *La Frange* shine in the firmament of *De Salez* affection, *La Hay* must set; or if *La Hay* will shine, *La Frange* must set: againe, if she fall not, I cannot stand, and if she stand, I must needs fall; and as the skie is not capable of two sunnes, so both of vs cannot shine in the *Horison* of his heart and thoughts at once: except thus, that *La Hay* may liue to see *La Frange* his wife, and her selfe his strumpet, when burning with false zeale to *De Salez*, and true inueterate malice

malice to *La Frange*, she forgetting God, swaps a bargain with the diuell, that *La Frange* must first goe to her graue, ere *La Hay* come to his bed, and resolves to sacrifice her as a *Victime* to her malice and ielousie, and to send her out of this world in an vntimely and bloody Coffin; Hellish *Aphorismes*, Infernall *Positions*, odious to *Earth*, and execrable to *Heauen*.

For wretched & impious strumpet, wilt thou needs not onely gallop, but flie to hell, and so redouble thy crimes purposely to redouble thy torméts, as first of whoredome, then of murder: Wretched, yea thrice wretched woman, how darest thou see earth, or thinke of heauen; when thy acted crimes are so odious, and thy pretended ones so monstrous, as thou deseruest to be shut soorth of the one, and spewed out of the other: For *alas*, consider what this poore *Gentle woman* hath done to thee, that thou shouldest doe this to her; She beares the image of *God*, and wilt thou therefore beare that of the diuell to destroy her: Ah me, where is thy religion, thy conscience, thy soule; that thou wilt thus hellishly imbathe thy hands in her blood, and embrue thy heart in her murder; If it be not that her vertues cry sic on thy *Vices*, thou hast no reason in *Nature*, and lesse in *Grace*, to attempt a deed so Tragically, an act so inhumane and execrable: But rest assured, that if thou proceed and finish this infernall and bloody stratageme of thine, although thou chance goe unpunished of men; yet the *Lord* (in his due time) will finde thee out, and both seuerely scourge, and sharply reuenge and chastice thee.

The effects of malice, and reuenge in men, are finite; in women infinite, theirs may haue bounds and

ends, but these none, or at least, seldome and difficultly: for hauing once conceiued these two monsters in their fantasies and braines, they long til they are deliuered and disburthened of them; and soto bring their abortiue issue to perfection, they (for the most part) are sharpe and seuer in their designs, and sudden and malicious in their executions, hating all delayes, so it bee not to doe euill: So this our bloodie and vitious Strumpet *La Hay*, is resolute to aduance, and not to retyre in this diabolicall businesse of hers. Of all kind of violent deaths, shee thinks none either so sure & secret as poyson; whether she consider the manner, or the matter: If the Deuill himselfe had not inuented this vnpareld cruelty, his agents and members had neuer knowen how to haue administred and practised it. But hauing resolved on the drug and ingrediens, shee now bethinkes her selfe of some hellish Empericke or Factor of Hell, to apply and giue it her, and her inueterate and implacable hatred making her curious in the research and inquiry thereof: shee is at last aduertised, that there is an old *Italian Empericke in Mompellier*, tearmed *S. Bernardo Michaels*, who is his *Arts* master in that infernall profession, when wholly concealing this mysterie and businesse from *De Salex*, shee by a second meanes, (with promise of store of gold) sends away for *Mischeale* from *Mompellier*: who in hope thereof, packs vp his drugges and trinkets, and within three dayes arriues at *Tbolonse*; where shee thinkes no where so fit and secret as the Church to consult and resolve on this bloody busines, the houre is eight the next morn, and the place the *Cordeliers* (or *Gray Friers*) Church, appoynted and agreed on betwixt them, where they

both

both meet. But shee (the better to disguise her selfe, and to blear the eyes of the world) wraps her selfe about in a great furred cloake, and muffles her selfe vp with a large coyse of veluet, and a rich taffata scarfe ouer it, as if she were some graue and reuerend old Matron: so being brought to each others presence, they being both on their knees, he to his Book, and shee to her Beads, shee proposeth him the poysoning of *La Frange*, daughter to the *President de Clugny*, for the which shee promiseth to giue him three hundred crownes of the Sunne to performe it; whereof he shall now haue one in hand, and the other two when he hath dispatched her. *Michael* like a limbe of the Deuill, being deeply in loue, and allured with this gold, vndertakes it; when swearing secrecy, and withall to performe it within ten dayes, she giues him the hundred crownes tyed vp in her handkercher, and so for that time they part.

Good God, what prophane *Christians*, what monsters of *Nature*, and Denils incarnate by profession are these, thus to pollute and defile the Church ordain'd for prayer, with the price and sale of innocent blood, a most prodigious and hellish impietie, since there is no sinne so odious or execrable to God, as that which is masked with pietie, and oueruayled with the cloke of sanctitie? And what a damnable yong strumpet, and old villaine are they, in so holy a place to treat and conclude so hellish a businesse? But beware, for the sword and arrow of Gods iust reuenge, and reuenging Iustice, threatens yee with no lesse, then vtter confusion and destruction,

La Hay infinitely glad of this agreement, returns from the Church, and *Michael* as glad of her gold, (being

(being informed of *La Franges* deformity, and to lose no time) trips away towards *President de Clugny* his house, taking that for a fit occasion to assay to make his daughter become his Patient, and he her *Empericke*: who sleekly insinuating, and skrewing himselfe into his knowledge and acquaintance, (in which profession the *Emperickes* and *Mounsebanks* of *Italy*, come no way short, but rather exceed all other Nations of the world) he proffers him his best seruice and skill, to redresse and reforme the body of the young Lady his daughter, adding withall (thereby to adde the more beliefe and credit to his speeches) that he is so farre from dispayring or doubting, as he is very confident thereof: and in the phrales and mysteries of his profession, giues him in outward appearance many inward and plausible reasons to induce him to beleue it. The good old *President* who preferring the cure of his daughter before any other earthly respect; hauing heard of *Michaeles* fame: begins to relish his reasons, and yet not ignorant that the *Mounbanckes* and *Charletans* of *Italy*, are Cousin *Germanes* to the *Alchemists* of *France*, who promise to make gold of drosse, and yet only bring forth drosse for gold, he holds it fit to take a consultation of the learnedst *Physicians*, and expert *Chirurgions* of the City, whereunto *Michaele* willingly consents, so they sit, being sixe in number, *Michaele* deliuers them his reasons to redresse the deformity of this young Ladies body (the *President* her father being present) whose reasons are heard, and controuerted of all sides betwixt them, the conclusion is, foure are of opinion that this cure is repugnant to the grounds of *Physicke*, and the principles of *Chirurgery*, and therefore

fore impossible to be effected : the other two are of a contrary iudgement, and held it feasible, and that many times God bleſſeth the Art and labours of a man, not onely beyond expectation, but also beyond hope and reason : so *De Clugny* seeing that these two with *Michaele* were three against foure, he in respect of the tender care and affection he bore his daughter, resolves to employ him, and giues him an hundred double Pistollers in hand to attempt it, with promise of as much more when hee hath performed it; whereof this miscreant and hellish Empericke *Michaele* being exceedingly glad, he betakes himselfe to his businesse, visits the young Lady, who promifeth him to redouble her fathers summe, if he make her body straight : when to reduce his impious contemplation, into infernall action, he outwardly applieth playsters and seare-clothes to her body, and inwardly administreth her pills and potions; and (O grieve to write it) therein infuseth deadly poyson, which hee knowes at the end of ten dayes will assuredly make a diuorce betweene her body and soule; and so send that to the death of this world, and this to the life of that to come : So this sweete and innocent Lady (wishing good to her selfe, and hurt to none in the world) first finds a giddinesse & swimming in her head; and within some six dayes after (in which time the poyson had dispersed it selfe throughout all the veynes and pores of her body) many sharpe gripes, and bitter throwes and convulsions, whereat her father grieues, and shee weepes; onely that gracelesse villaine her *Empericke*, bids them bee of good comfort, and that the more paine and grieve she suffered, the better and speedyer hope there was of her cure; but yet inwardly in his

deuillish heart, knowes that the poyson effectually operated and wrought with her as hee desired and expected, and that by these infallible signes and symptoms, his patient drew neere towards the period of her end. Wherevpon he repaires secretly to *La Hay*, and bids her prouide the rest of his mony, for that *La Frange* could not possibly liue two dayes to an end, whereat she tryumphing and reioycing with much alacrity, againe promiseth it him: and indeed the hellish Art of this execrable *Empericke* doth not now deceiue him, though in the end the malice of the deuill his Doctor will: For iust as the tenth day was expired, this harmelesse sweet young Lady dyes, to the incomparable and vnspeakable grieffe of the good old *President* her father; for that she was the staffe of his age, and the chiefe and onely comfort of his life, who disconsolatly and mournfully seemed to drown himselfe in his teares herear, cursing the houre that he first saw this accursed *Empericke Michael*, who had robbed him of his onely ioy and delight, of his deare and sweete daughter *La Frange*. But this murderous *Michael* hauing learnt of the deuill to feare no colours, meanes not to step a foot from *Tholouise*, and so sends priuately for *La Hay*, of whom he craues the performance of her promise, for that (quoth he) hee had performed his. Why (quoth *La Hay*) is that crook-backt dwarfe *La Frange* dead? She is gone (quoth *Michael*) to her eternall rest: when *La Hay* not able to retaine her selfe for excesse of ioy, runs to him, giues him the other hundred crownes, together with many kisses, which take (quoth she) as a pledge of my continuall good wil towards thee, when again swearing secrecie, they both take leaue each of other, and part.

The

The newes of *La Franges* death, ratleth and resoundeth ouer all *Tbolouſe*, her kinſefolkes grietue at it, her friends lament it, and all who eyther know her, or her fame, bewayle it, onely *De Salex*, and execrable *La Hay* excepted, who knowing her to haue beene the onely ſtop and hinderance of their mariage, they are ſo rauished with ioy heereat, as they ſeeme to conteſt and enuy each other, who ſhall firſt bring the newes hereof each to other: yea, the exceſſe of *De Salex* his ioy is as boundleſſe, as that of *La Hayes* delight, ſo that he ſeemes to flye to her to her fathers houſe, where ſhee with out-ſpread armes receiues and entertaines him; and there they mutually congratulate each other for this her death, he affirming, and ſhe beleeuing, that *La Frange* being gone to heauen, it ſhall not bee long ere the Church make them man and wiſe on earth. In the meane time, hee being wholly ignorant of her poyſoning, and yet the olde *Preſident* her father, and the reſt of her friends ſuſpecting it, they cauſe her body to be opened: and although they finde no direct poyſon, yet remarking a little kind of yellow tincture on her heart and liuer, as alſo ſome ſhew thereof through her frozen veines: They cauſe *Michaele* to be apprehended and imprifoned, and ſo procure a Decree from the *Parliament* to haue him rack'd: At the newes wherof, *La Hay* is extremely tormented and perplexed, as well foreſeeing and knowing, that her life lay at the mercy of his tongue: wherfore to fortifie his ſecrecie, and therby to ſecure her owne feare & danger, ſhe by a confident friend of his, ſends him a hundred French crownes more, and promiſeth him to giue him a rich *Diamond* worth as much againe; who (as before) being extremely

treamely couetous, and the Deuill (resembling himselfe) still harping to him on that string which most delights him, his heart is so deuillishly obdurated, and his fortitude so armed and prepared, as his patience and constancy not onely endures; but outbraues the crueltie of his torments; and so he is acquitted of this his pretended crime: but he hath not as yet made his peace with God.

And now is *De Salex* resolved to make a Iourney to *Paris*, to draw his fathers consent that he may marry *La Hay*, but the wisdom of the father shall anticipate the folly of the *Sonne*, for he hauing heard in *Paris* of *La Franges* death, and still fearing, that because of his frequent familiarity with that strumpet *La Hay*, he will in the end marry her. He in *Paris* buyes a Captaines place for him in the *Regiment* of the *Kings* Guard, and likewise dealt with a very rich Counsellour of that *Court* of *Parliament*, named *Monsieur de Briançon*, that his sonne may marry his eldest daughter: *Madamoyselle de Plessis*, a very sweet and faire young *Gentlewoman*; and the old folkes are already agreed on all conditions, onely it rests, that the yong, sees and lone; To which end *Argentier* writes away with all speed to *Tholouse* for his sonne *De Salex* to come vp to him, who before he had receiued his fathers letter, (as we haue formerly vnderstood) was ready to vndertake that Iourney: *La Hay* infinitely fearefull and ielous to lose her pray, with *Crocodile* teares in her eyes, and *Hyena* aspects in her lookes, informs *De Salex*, that she feareth that his father hath provided a wife for him in *Paris*, but he vowes and sweares to her, that neither his father, nor the whole world, shall make him marry any other then her selfe,

and

and so after many embraces and kisses, he takes horse and leaues *Tboloufe*.

Being arriued at *Paris*, his father very ioyfully bids him welcome, and referres to conferre with him till the next morning; but such is *De Salex* rashnesse and folly, as hee hath no sooner supped in company of his father, but he prayes to speake with him. When the seruants voyding the chamber, he earnestly and humbly beseeching him, that sith *La Frange* is dead, he will now be pleased that he may marry *La Hay*, whom, quoth he, I onely affect and loue before all the maides of the world: His father exceedingly incensed hereat, vowes that he had rather see him fairely buried in his graue, and that of all the females of the world, he shall not marry *La Hay*: and so for that night they betake themselves to their beds, the father grieues with his sonnes folly, the sonnes with his fathers auerfnesse: The next morne *Argentier* calles for his sonne. When the doores shut, he bids him shut his eyes to his foolish familiarity with *La Hay*, and now to open them to the preferment, he hath purchased him, and so relates him how he hath procured him the honour of a *Captaines* place, in the *Regiments* of the Kings Guard, as also a very faire young *Gentlewoman* for his wife, tearmed *Madamoyselle de Plessis*, the eldest daughter of *Monsieur de Briançon*, one of the richest Counsellours of *Paris*: But *De Salex* hauing his eyes and thoughts wholly fixed on *La Hay*, with a discontented looke, returnes his father this peruerse and disobedient replie.

That he will not accept of the *Captaines* place, nor once see *De Plessis*, but that he is constantly resolu'd, either to wed *La Hay*, or his graue, whereat his father

is so extreame ly incensed, as with much passion and choller, he commands him henceforth, not to dare so much as to name him *La Hay*, swearing by his *Sauionr*, that for his obstinacy and disobedience, hee will disinherite him, as indeed he might, hauing himselfe purchased three parts of his lands and reuenues, through his care and industry in his profession, and so much discontent and choller, leaues in his *Coleagues of Tholouse*, who are already wayting and attending his comming.

De Salez is all on fire at this his fathers bitter resolution against him, and stormes and fumes, not onely beyond the bonds of reason, religion, and humanity; but also beyond himselfe. For sith *La Hay* is his sole delight & ioy, & that his father hath vowed he shall neuer mary her, his affectiō to her, makes him resolute to dispatch his father: yea, his head conceiues such murtherous thoughts, & his heart attracts, & assumes such degenerate and diuelish blood against him, that like an execrable wretch, and a hellish sonne, disdayning to take Counsell from *God*, and therefore taking it from the diuell his bloody *Tutor* and *Abettor*, he vows he will forthwith rid his hands of his father, and that he will therefore send him into another world, because he would giue him no content in this.

Oh wretched monster of *Nature*, Limbe of the diuell, nay a very diuell thy selfe, thus to resolute to take his life from him that gaue thee thine; Foule staine of mankind, bloody Paracydious miscreant, can no respect either of thy naturall and filliall obedience to thy kind and deere father, or of his white haire, and venerable old age, restraints thee? or no consideration

of thy conscience or thy soule, of heaven or hell deterre thee from this bloody, inhumane, and damnable designe of thine, in laying violent hands on him? O me, where are thy thoughts, where thy senses, where thy heart, thy soule, to act so execrable and infernall a *Tragidie*, on him without whom thou hadst not been: on thy father, whom by the laws of *Heaven* and *Earth*, thou oughtest both to loue, honour, reuerence and obey.

But *De Salex* being resolute in this inhumane rage, & implacable malice & furie, watcheth how he may take time at aduantage, to effect and finish this his bloody businesse, and on a night after supper, hearing his old father complaine that he found himselfe not well, and commanding his Clarke *De Buissie*, very early in the next morning to carry his water to *Doffor Salepin*, a famous *Physician*, whose chamber was farte off, in the place *Maubert*, he himselfe lying in *Grennelles* street: *De Salex* thinks this a fit opportunity to dispatch his father, the which, O a thousand griefes and pitties to speake off, he accordingly performeth. For the morne appearing, his father hauing sent away his Clarke with his water, and betaking himselfe to sleepe till his returne. His watchfull and murderous sonne, hauing purposely made himselfe ready, and through the key hole and cranies of his chamber doore, espying his father sleeping, he intends that this shall be his last sleepe: When softly stealing into his chamber, he (incouraged and animated by the diuell) and approaching his bed, as exempt of feare as grace, without any more delay or circumstance, stifles his father betwixt two pillowes; when leauing him breathlesse in his bed, his face exposed to the

the ayre, and the doore shut, goes downe, gives the master of the house, the good morrow, and so trips away as fast as he can, to the signe of the swan within Saint *Hennories* Gate; and from thence rides away to Saint *Clow*, (two leagues distant from *Paris*) to see *Gondyes* gardens, fountaines, and house wherein that execrable and damnable *Iacabine* Frier, *Iaqués Clement* murthered *Henry the third king of France*, but with an intent to returne to his fathers lodging immediatly after dinner, and to plead ignorance of the fact, and withall if occasion serue to stand vpon his innocency, and iustification, as indeed he did. Now his fathers *Clarke De Buissye*, returning in the morning from *Doctor Salepin*, entering his masters chamber, finds him starke dead; and almost cold in his bed: whereat he makes many bitter outcries, and grievous exclamations: the man of the house hereat ascends the chamber, infinitely laments, grieues at this sorrowfull accident and spectacle; Vowes to *De Buissye* that he saw none who so euer in his house, much lesse in his masters chamber, and that his sonne *Monsieur de Salez* departed as soone as he himselfe: they search his body, and find it no way wounded, so they belecue and resolute that some panguish hath carried him away; Yet they hold it rather wisdom then folly to acquaint the *Lieutenant* Cryminall therewith; fearing least he might after suspect either violence or poyson: So he comes, conferres with his sonne *De Salez*, with his *Clarke De Buissye*, and with the man of the house; he visites the dead body, findes onely his head somewhat swollen, which his *Physicians* affirme, may be his struiuing and struggling with death. When the *Lieutenant* out of his zeale and integritie to Iustice; hauing

hauing informed himselfe of Doctor *Salepin*, of *De Buissyes* being with him, as also from Saint *Clon* of his sonne *De Salex*, being there timely in the morning, and withall, that his Trunkes were all safe, and nothing wanting; they banish all suspicion, and without farther enquiry, or doubt, commend the dead corps to the graue: Whose funerall with exterior shew of extreame griefe and sorrowe *De Salex* performs in *Paris*, with all *Decency* and *Decorum*, answerable in all respects to his fathers ranke and qualitic. But we shall shortly see this maske of his diuellish hypocrisie puld off, and this inhumane paracide of his, both shamefully, and sharply, reuenged, by the iust iudgement and finger of God: The manner is thus:

This harmeles and innocent old father *Argentier*, is no sooner laid in his vntimely graue, but his bloody and execrable sonne *De Salex*, within eight dayes after, leaues *Paris*, and returnes to *Tholouse*, where already this sorrowfull newes is disperfed and diuulged, being for his vertues and integritie of life, generally bewayled of the whole Citie, onely gracelesse and impudent *La Hay* triumphs hereat, and her very heart and thoughts daunce for ioy heereof: she welcomes home her *De Salex*, with a world of sweet and sugred kisses; who as glad of her presence, returnes her them with a plentifull and prodigall interest; but his lustfull loue to her is so feruent, and his folly in himselfe so peruerse and obstinate; as he hath scarce the patience, much lesse the respect and modesty to weare blackes for his father sixe weekes, but casts them off, takes on gaudie, and scarlet apparell, and very solemnely marries *La Hay*: Whereby in respect

of the inequality of their descents and meanes : but especially, of her whorish conditions ; he makes himselfe the laughter and May-game of all *Tholouse*.

But good *God*, what a prodigious and hellish match is this, sixth man and wife, and both are murderers ; O execrable and miserable wretches, O bloody and impious miscreants, for sure if this marriage of yours proue happy, I may boldly and truly say, there will neuer any proue vnfortunate and miserable : For *Alas, alas*, what doe those impious and damnable crimes of theirs deserue and portend ; but misery, ruine, and confusion of all sides ? neither shall the curiositie of our enquiry carry vs farre, before we see it surpriſe and befall them.

For before they had been fully married three moneths, *De Salex* reaping his desires, and feasting himselfe with the pleasures of her youth, he directly, contrary to his hopes & expectation, is enforced to see & know, that which before he wold haue thought neuer to haue known or seen: for thinking his wife to haue been a modest & chaste *Diana*, he now sees she is a deboshed *Layis* : yea, his misery is so great, as he needs no spectacle to see, that she dayly makes him a Knight of the forked order; and almost euery houre, despite of his care and ielousie, claps a cuckowes feather in his hat : which to preuent and remedie, he first administred requests and perswasions, and then complains to her father; But these are too weake reasons and too gentle motines, to preuaile with so insatiable a strumpet ; so as he is constrained to adde threats to his requests, and in the end blowes to his threats. But as it is impossible for the Leopard to change his skin, and the *Æthiopian* his hew, so *De Salex* sees it labour
lost

lost to thinke to reclayme his wife from her beastly sinne of adultery, wherein (notwithstanding all that possible he can doe) she takes such a delight and habite, as by this time she is growne so extreamely impudent, as when her husband is at home, she is abroad ranging; and he is no sooner abroad, but she is instantly at home reuelling with her ruffians: Yea, she is growne to that hight of obscenity, as she contemns and sleights her husband; that whither he be abroad or at home, she will play the whore before his face with open doores: which although it be too late for him to remedy, yet it bites him to the heart, & grieues him to the gall: & now it is that he a thousand times thinkes of his fathers aduise and counsell in forsaking her; and as often wisheth he had followed it. Now it is that his vnaturall murthering of his father, thunders forth horror, terror, and repentance to his foule and guilty conscience; and now it is that he wisheth from his heart and soule, that he had beene blind when he first saw her, and fairely laid in his graue before he first lay with her in bed. But these his complaints and griefes, bring him onely vexation and misery instead of comfort; for now he vtterly dispaire, and sees no hope of his wiues reformation: Whereupon he resolues to diuorce himselfe from her, & to that end takes counsell thereon: but it is not so secretly managed by him, but the strumpet his wife hath present notice and inckling thereof, whereupon seeing her husband exceeding rich, both in lands, coyne, plate, and other rich household-stuffe, she vowes not to quite her great ioynter share and interest heereof thus. But before he had inrolled his suite in the Spirituall Court, or any way vented his owne shame, and

his wifes infamy in publike, she like a true Courtisan, and debauched strumpet as she was, vowes to preuent him that would preuent her, and to send him to his death that would seeke to diuorce her; and in respect of his ielousie and malice, that as shee had formerly poisoned *La Frange* for her husbands sake, so shee would now murther him for her owne.

But miserable and execrable wretch, Oh to what a monstrous height and huge summe will all these thy beastly sinnes, and bloody enormities arise and amount vnto? But *Lust, Malice, and Revenge* like three infernall furies, so possesse and preoccupate her senses, as shee will not retyre, till shee hath sent her husband into another world in a bloody winding-sheet. To which end, watching the time when most of her seruants were gone abroad to gather in the Vintage, shee softly opening her husbands chamber doore, steales in, and finding him soundly sleeping, approcheth his bed, when drawing forth a raser from her slecue, which shee had purposely prouided, shee with an implacable and damnable malice steps to him, and cuts his throat, speaking onely these words to her selfe: *Loe heere the reward of thy Ielousie*; when throwing the knife, and her outward Taffata Gowne into the house of office, she leauing him weltring in his blood, very secretly conueyes her selfe through the Gallery to the Garden, where her wayting-Gentlewoman attends her, and so hyes away to the Church, thinking with a wretched impiety to cloake this her second murther, as her former, vnder the vaile of religion and piety: but her hopes, and the Deuill that gaue them her, will now deceiue her.

De Salex, her husband strining and struggling for life

life against the pangs of death: feare and haste (contrary to her intent and minde) had so made his murderous wifes hand shake and tremble, as shee did not so fully cut his throat-boale, but hee could yet both crie and groane, which he did very mournfully, and which indeed was soone ouer-heard by a man and a maydservant of his, who only remained in the house, who hearing their masters voyce, and hastily running vp, at these his pitifull and lamentable out-cries, stepping to his assistance, they heare him (with his best power) vtter these fearefull speeches, *That Strumpet my wife hath kill'd mee: O that shee-Deuill my wife hath murdered me.* Whereat they cry out at the windows to the neighbours for helpe, alledging that their master is murdered. The neighbours assemble, & heare him report so much: so they send away for his Confessor, and the *Lieutenant Criminall*, to both whom he againe confesseth, *That it is the Strumpets his wife who hath murdered him:* And then raising himselfe vp in his bed (with as much strength as his dying wound would permit him) he taking them both by the hands, with infinit sighes and teares reueales to them, that he it was, who at the seducing of the Deuill, had stifled his father *Argentier* to death in *Paris*, that he did it onely to marry this whoore his murderous wife *La Hay*; that the killing of his father, yea the very remembrance thereof infinitely grieues his heart and soule, and for the which he infinitely repenteth himselfe, and beseecheth the Lord of mercy, in mercy to forgieue it him; and likewise prayed all that were present to pray vnto God for him: and these were his last wordes, for now his fleeting and fading breath would permit him to say no more.

All that were present, are amazed at this lamentable confession of his, to see that hee should murther his father, and his execrable wife, well neere himselfe; so they all glorified God for the detection and discovery hereof: But the *Lieutenant Criminell*, and the *Councillors* his Associates step to the window, and consult to haue him hanged, whiles hee is yet liuing, for the murthering of his father. But *De Salex* saues them that labour: for there and then he sinks into his bed, and dyes away before them: so they instantly search the house and Citie for this wretched Murtheresse *La Hay*, whom impious and bloody strumpet they at last finde in the *Dominican Friers Church* at a Sermon, from whence with much obloquy and indignitie they drag her to prison, where they charge her with the murther of her husband *De Salex*, which the Deuill as yet will not permit her to confesse; but being adiudged by them to the Racke, she at the very first torment confesseth it.

Vpon which seuerall murthers, the *Criminell Iudges* of the *Tournelles* proceed to sentence: so first they adiudge the dead body of *De Salex* for so inhumanly murdring his father *Argentier*, to be half a day hanged by the heeles to the common gallows, and then to be burnt to ashes, which is accordingly executed: then they adiudge his wife *La Hay*, for murthering him, the next day to be strangled, then burnt: so that night some Diuines deale with her in prison about the state of her soule, whom they finde infinitely obdurated through the vanitie of her youth, and the temptations of the Deuill; but they worke effectually with her, and so at last (by the mercies of God) drawe her to contrition and repentance, when willing her
not

not to charge her soule with the concealing of any other crime; and shewing her the dangers thereof, shee very freely, yet sorrowfully, confesseth; how shee it was, that for three hundred crownes had caused the *Empericke Michael* to poyson *La Frange*, for the which shee told them she was now exceedingly repentant and sorrowfull: Whereof the Diuines (sith it was not deliuered them vnder the seale of Confession) aduertising the Iudges, they all wonder at Gods prouidence, to see how all these murthers are discovered and burst forth, one in the necke of the other; so they alter her sentence, and for these her double murthers, they condemne her to haue her right hand cut off, and then to be burnt aliue: and so they make curious inquiry and research to apprehend this old bloody varlet *Michael*.

In the meane time, that very afternoone, this miserable and murtherous Curtisan *La Hay*, though to the griefe of her sorrowfull father and sisters, yet to the ioy of all *Tholome*, is brought and fastned to her stake, where her hand being first stricke off, she with many sighes and teares deliuereth these few words: That her crimes were so foule and odious, as shee was ashamed to looke either God or man in the face; That she was very sorrowfull for causing *La Frange* to be poysoned, as also for murthering of her husband *De Salex*, whose wealth she onely affirmed she loued, but not himselfe, the which she wholly attributed to the lust and vanitie of her youth, to her neglect of prayer and forsaking of God; which made the Deuill so strong with her, and shee with the Deuill: and which was the sole cause and ground of this her miserable ruine and destruction; she with teares and prayers

prayers besought the *Lord* to be good vnto her soule; and (lifting vp her eyes and hands to Heauen) likewise beseech the whole assembly to pray heartily vnto *God* for her: when recommending her soule into the hands of her Redeemer, the fire being alighted, her body was soone consumed to ashes, whose lamentable, yet iust end and punishment, caused a number of spectators to weepe, as yet pitying her youth and beautie, as much as they detested the enormitie of her crimes.

And now for this deuillish and murtherous Empericke *Michael*, although as soone as he heard of *La Hayes* imprisonment, he (to saue himselfe) left *Tholouse*, and fled towards *Castres*, disguised in a *Friers* habit, with his beard shauen: yet by the care of the *Court of Parliament*, or rather by the immediat finger and prouidence of *God*, he is found out, and brought back to *Tholouse*; where for poysoning of *La Frange*, (the which he now without the Racke confesseth) he is adiudged to be broken on the *Wheele*, there to remaine till he be dead, and then his body to be thrown into the *Riuer of Garrone*: the which the same day is accordingly executed and performed, to the infinite ioy of all the spectators: but as he liued an *Atheist*, so he desperatly died a *Deuill*, without any shew at all, either of contrition or repentance; onely he vomited forth this wretched speech, That because the world had so much to say to him, he would say nothing to the world, but bade the Executioner dispatch him.

Now by the sight of this mournefull and bloody *History*, the *Christian Reader* may obserue and see how *Gods* reuenge doth still triumph against murther, and how he in his due time and prouidence doth assuredly

(still)

still detect and punish it. It is a History which may
serue to deterre and forwarne all yong *Gentlemen*, not
to frequent the companies of whores and strumpets;
and all sonnes not to transgresse the will of their pa-
rents, much lesse not dare to lay violent hands on
them. It is a glasse wherin yong *Gentlewomen & Wives*
may at life see, what bitter fruits and sharpe ends euer
attend on Whordome and Murther: It is a liuely *Ex-
ample* for all kind of *Empericks* and *Druggsters* whatso-
euer, to consider how seuerely *God* doth infallibly re-
uenge and punish the poysoning of his *Saints* and *chil-
dren*. In a word, it is a *Lesson* and *Caveat* for all people,
and for all degrees of people, but especially of *Chri-
stians*, (who professe the Gospell of *Christ*) not onely
to detect these foule sinnes of Reuenge and Murther
in others, but to hate and abhorre them in their
selues: which that all may endeauour to pra-
ctise and performe, graunt good *God*,
who indeed art the onely giuer of
all goodnesse.

I

THE



THE
TRIVMPHS OF
GODS REVENGE A-
 gainst the crying and execrable
Sinne of Murther.

History XII.

Albemare causeth Pedro and Leonardo to murder Baretano, and he after marrieth Clara, whom Baretano first sought to marry: He causeth his man Valerio to poyson Pedro in prison, and by a letter which Leonardo sent him, Clara perceiues that her husband Albemare had hired and caused Pedro and Leonardo to murder her first loue Baretano; which letter she reueales to the Iudge, so he is hanged, and likewise Valerio and Leonardo for these their bloody crimes.



Ith what face can we presume to tread on the face of *Earth*, or dare lift vp our eyes to that of *Heauen*, when our thoughts are so rebellious to conspire, and our hearts and resolutions so cruel, to embrue our hands in the innocent blood of our harmelesse and *Christian* brethren: Thoughts they are, which in seeming to please our senses, poyson our soules, (and doe therefore truly poyson our soules, because they so falsly please our senses,) Resolutions

solutions they are, which we cannot conceiue or attempt with more inhumanity, then finish with misery. Sith in thinking to send them to their vntimely graues, we assuredly send our selues to our owne miserable and infamous ends; whereof in this ensuing *History*, we shall find many wofull *Presidents*, and mournfull examples, in diuers vnfortunate and wretched persons, who were borne to happinesse, not to infamy; to prosperity, not to misery. If they had had so much *Grace* to secure their liues, as *Vanitie*, and *Impietie* to ruine them; It is a *History* purposely produced, & penned, for our detestation, not for our imitation: Sith it is a poynt of (true and happie) wisdom in all men to beware by other mens harmes; Read it then with a full intent to profit thy selfe thereby, and so thou mayest boldly, and safely rest assured, that the sight of their sinnes and punishments, will proue the reformation of thine owne.

FRUITfull, and faire *Lombardie* is the Countrey, and the great, populous, and rich *Citie* of *Milan* (the Capitall of that Dutchie) the place where the Scene of this mournfull & *Tragicall History* is layen where perpetrated: The which to refetch from 'its first spring and *Originall*, theueby the more truely to informe our curiositie, and instruct our knowledge: We must then vnderstand, that long since the *Duke of Ferrara* succeeded the *Count De Fuentes*, as *Vice-roy* of that potent and flourishing Dutchie, for *King Philip the third* of *Spaine* his master: There was natiue and resident in that *Citie* an ancient *Nobleman*, tearmed *Seigneur Leonardo Capello*, who in his younger yeares had married a *Spanish Lady*, and brought her from *Spaine*

to *Milan*) tearmed *Dona Maria de Castiana*: He exceeding rich and noble, and she as noble and faire; he by his fathers side allied to *Cardinall Charles Barromeo* (since Sainted by Pope *Paul V.*) shee by her mother to the present *Duke of Albucurque*, hee infinitely honoured for his extraction and wealth: she no lesse beloued and respected for her beautie and vertues: and although there are but few mariages contracted betweene the *Millanese*s and *Spaniards*, and those very seldome proue succesful and prosperous, in respect of the antipathy, which (for the most part) is hereditary betwixt the commands of the *Spaniards*, and the subiection of the *Millanese*s: yet it seemed that this of *Capello* and *Castiana* was first instituted in heauen, ere consummated on earth, for so sweetly did their yeres humours and affections conioyne and sympathize, as although they were two persons, yet I may truly affirme and say, they had but one heart, affection and desire, which was mutually to please, and reciprocally to affect and loue each other. And as Marriages cannot be reputed truly happy and fortunate, if they be not blessed and crowned with the blessings of children, (which indeed is not onely the sweetest life of humane content, but also the best and sweetest content of our humane life) so they had not been long married, ere God honoured them and their nuptiall bed, with a beautifull and delicate and young daughter, tearmed *Dona Clara*, the onely childe of their loynes, and heyre of their lands and vertues, being indeed the true picture of themselves, and the ioyfull pledge and seale of their intire and inuiolable affections; who hauing ouerpast her Infancy, and obtayned the eighteenth yeare of her age, she was so exquisite-
ly

ly adorned with beaurie, and so excellently endued and enriched with *vertues*; as distinctly for eyther, or ioyntly for both, she was, and was truely reputed, the *Paragon of Nature*, the pride of *Beautie*, the wonder of *Millan*, the glory of her *Sex*, and the *Phenix* of her *Time*. And because the puritie and perfection of her beaurie deserves to be seene through this dimme Perspective, and the dignitie of her vertues knowen of the Reader in this my impolished relation. For the first, shee was of stature indifferently tall, but exceeding streight and slender: her haire either of a deepe Chessnut colour, or rather of a light black, but to which most adhering and inclining, fancy mought, but curiositic could difficultly distinguish; Her complexion and tincture, rather of an amorous and louely browne, then of a Roseat and Lillie die; but yet so sweetly pure, & purely sweet: (and withall rather fat then leane) that no earthly obiect could more delight and please the eye, or rauish the sense. And for her eyes, those two relucient lamps and starres of loue, they were so blacke and piercing, that they had a secret and imperious influence, to drawe all other eyes to gaze and doe homage to hers; as if all were bound to loue her, and she so modest, as if purposely framed to loue none but her selfe: Neither did her Front, Lippes, Necke or Pappes any way detract, but euery way to adde to the perfection of her other excellencies of *Nature*: For the first seemed to be the *Promontory* of the *Graces*, the second, the Residence of delight and pleasure; The third the *Pyramides* of *State* and *Majestie*; And the fourth the *Hills* and *Valley* of loue. But leaue we the dainties of her body, now to speake of the rarities and excellencies of her

mind, which I cannot rightly define, whether the curiositie and care of her parents in her education, or her owne ingenious and apt inclination to *Vertue* and *Honour*, were more predominant in her: for in either, or rather in both, shee was so exquisite and excellent, that in *Languages, Singing, Musicke, Dancing, Wisdome, Temperance, and Modestie*, she was so fully compleat and rare, that to giue her her due, and no more, shee could not be paraleld by any yong Lady of *Lombardy*, or *Italy*, nor equalliz'd but by her selfe.

Thus if her noble extraction, and fathers wealth made her surmount others, and her delicious sweet beauty & vertues excell her selfe, no maruell if those *Adamants*, and these excellencies draw diuers of the best *Canaliers* and chiefeest *Gallants* both of *Milan* and *Lombardy*, to affect and seeke her in marriage; and indeed although shee be sought by diuers of them with much respect and honour, answerable in all regard to her ranke and quality; yet neither her parents, or selfe are so much importuned by any, as by *Signior Giouani Albemare*, a young noble *Gentleman* of the citie, who was adorned and fortified with these humane priuiledges, to bee well descended, rich, and of some twenty fye yeares olde; a match in the eye and censure of the world, yea, and in al outward appearance correspondent and equiualent; if his generous perfections and vertues had paraleld hers, or if the candeur and sinceritie of her affection had not iustly transported her thoughts and heart from him, because she had formerly fixed and fetled them on another *Gentleman*, younger of yeares then *Albemare*, but in all other respects, as well of *Nature*, as *Fortune*, euery way his superiour, named *Signior Alphonfus Barretano*,

retano, a young Gentleman of one of the noblest families of *Millan*, of some eightene yeares old, whose father was lately deceased, and had left him sole heire to many rich lands and possessions; but (withall) exceedingly intrangled in Law, and ingaged in many debts and morgages, whereinto the vanitie and prodigalitie of his youth had deeply precipitated and ingulphed him: which consequently reflecting and falling on his sonne, we shall see will proue a hinderance to his marriage, and an obstacle to his content and preferment. But to obserue some order and decorum in the conduction and dilation of this History, wee must briefly be informed, that as of all the Beauties of *Lombardy*, *Albemare* onely chiefly affected and loued *Clara*; so of all the *Caualiers* of the world, *Clara* affected and loued no other but *Baretano*: for as conformitie of yeares, manners, and inclinations, breed a *sympathie* in affections; so they in their tender youth often frequented one the others company, sometimes at the Dauncing, and Musick Masters, but many times at Weddings, Feastes, and noble assemblies: being well neere as equall in age, as in complexion and stature. Againe, the vicinitie of their residence addeed much to the combining and inflaming of their affections: for they were opposite in nothing but in their mansion houses, from whose galleries and windowes many times publikely, but more often by stealth, their eyes could not refraine to tilt at each other, with the inuisible launces of loue and affection, which bred such a habit, and that habit so powerful a second *Nature*, that it was now become impossible for them not to gaze each on other: so as if the innocency of their purilitie, made them delight in each others sight and

and company with desire; so now their more ripper yeates inforce them to desire it with delectation: for when as yet they were so yong, as they knew not the instinct and influence of *Nature* (which cannot bee taught by a more powerfull or ingenious Tutrix then her selfe) yet they neuer met but kissed, nor kissed, but as if their heart and thoughts checke their lippes for taking such short farwels each of other: But now when their years had proclaimed them both very capable to march vnder the Standard of *Hymeneus*: This *Venus* & that *Adonis*, for so her fresh beauty, & his flourishing youth (with as much right as fame in *Milan*,) generally entituled them: They felt some pleasure wanting, which as yet they could not find; and therefore no maruaile, if they desired to find that which they wanted: So as burning in affection each to other, *Clara* hearing spoken of a husband, infinitely wished that *Baretano* were hers; and when he heard of a wife, he ardently longed, and feruently desired that *Clara* were his: Neither can I rightly say, whether he were more affectionate in her constancy to her; or shee constant and resolute in her affection to him: so that as heretofore they hardly knew the way to kisse, now time (running on in her swift careere) had taught them to desire to marry: and that whereas formerly *Baretano* onely tearmed *Clara* his sweet Mayd, and she him her deare *Friend*: Now loue had suggested and giuen them new desires, and therefore new *Epithites*: for sometimes as well in earnest as in iest, he could not refraine to tearme her his sweet wife, nor she him her deare husband; and herein their tongues were onely but the outward Hearaulds of their inward hearts, as their hearts were of their
more

more secret and retired desires. And as feruent loue, and true discretion, very seldome concurre and meet; so although affection made them rich in inuention new inuentions to meet and kisse : yet they were so poore, or rather so blind in discretion, as they could not beare their affections in secrecie and silence : but by this time they are bewrayed to their Parents, and diuulged to their acquaintance: but if any grieue and storme at this vnexpected newes, it is first *Albemare*, then *Capello* and *Castiana*, betwixt whom there was a secret promise, and verball contract, that he and no other should marry their daughter.

Thus we see that *Albemare* & *Baretano* are become Competitors and Riuals in their affections, for either of them affect *Clara* as the mistris of their thoughts, and both adore her as the Queene Regent of their desires. But as they sympathize in their hopes to purchase her for their wife : So they differ in the meanes and progresse of their resolutions, how to obtaine her. For whiles *Baretano* sues the daughter before her Parents, so doth *Albemare* the Parents before their daughter : but what effects and ends, these beginnings will produce, ye shall shortly see, and they themselues very soone both feelee and find:

Capello and *Castiana* (as we haue formerly said) with much affliction and grieue, vnderstanding of their daughters affection to *Baretano*, and reciprocally of his to her, they (with much impatience and passion) relate it to *Albemare*, whose affection to *Clara*, hath made him so subtile towards them, as although his heart knowes this newes, yet he makes his tongue denie the knowledge thereof; when protesting of his intire and feruent affection to her : and that he must

either wed her or his grave : they consult on their important businesse, how they may Dethronize *Baretano*, and set and inthronize *Albemare* in the chance and choyce of *Clara's* affection: As for *Capello* and *Castiana*, they so highly affect *Albemaes* great and free estate, and so disdainfully hate the intricate incombances of *Baretano's*, as they vow, there resolutions shall Sayle by the compasse of his desires; and he in exchange, that his affections and desires shall still steere their course by that of their resolutions : So from the matter of their agreement, they proceed to the manner how to effect it; To which end her father and mother single their daughter apart, and in mild and faire tearmes demand her, what hath past betwixt her and *Baretano*, and whether she be so simple and inconsiderate to take so poore a Gentleman for her husband, whose estate is so weake and small, as it cannot well maintaine himselfe, much lesse her; *Clara* already prepared and armed by her affection to receiue these, or the like speeches from her Parents', hauing twice or thrice metamorphosed the Lillies of her cheekes into Roses, very temperately and modestly returns them this discreet and respectiue answer.

That as she must needs affirme she is confident of *Baretano's* affection to her, so she must as truly denie, that as yet he had euer motioned her for marriage; which if he had, considering that his birth, meanes, and vertues were such as euery way deserued not onely her equall but her superiour, she is enforced to reueale them, that she loues him so tenderly and deere-ly, as if her will and pleasure be not contradicted by theirs, it will be not onely her ioy but her felicity, to accept and take him for her husband, before all others of the world.

But

But this modest answer of hers, they hold too peremptory for a child to giue, and Parents to receiue; as if it sauoured more of irrigrular zeale to *Baretano*, then of due respect and obedience to themselves, yet the sooner to diuert her from her owne desires and resolutions to make her flexible to theirs, they as yet hold it fit, rather to continue mild then imperious towards her, and so by deprauing the deserts and debasing the merits of *Baretano*, to seeke to extoll and magnifie those of *Albemare*, as if the first were onely a foyle, and the second a rich *Diamond*, worthy of her affection and wearing: and indeed so exquisite and excellent a *Caualeir*, they depaint him to her in the richest frame and pompe of all his prayses, as well of the endowments of mind, as of those of *Fortune*, that they leaue no insinuating *Oratory* vnessayed, nor perswasive attempt vnattempted, to make shake her hands with *Baretano*, and consequently to extend her armes & heart to receiue & retaine *Albemare*: But although she were yong in yeares and experience; yet loue in this fragrant and flourishing spring of her youth, had so refined her iudgement, and indoctrinated and prompted her tongue, that her thoughts commanded & marshalled by her heart, and both by her desires and affection to *Baretano*, she confusedly intermixing, and interrupting her words with many far fetched broken sighes, againe returns her Parents this reply.

If your age will not, yet my youth or rather my heart informes me, that *Baretano* as far exceeds *Albemare* in the priuiledges of the mind and body, as *Albemare* doth him in those of *Fortune*, but that my resolutions and answers, may answer, and correspond

with my obedience, although I loue *Baretano*, yet I will neuer hate, rather honour *Albemare*; but to make him my husband, or my selfe his wife, if Earth haue, I hope Heauen hath not decreed it: And I humbly beseech yee, that this may rest your Resolution, as I assuredly thinke it shall and will remaine mine.

Capello and *Cassiana* (like discreet parents) seeing their daughter *Clara* wholly wedded (in a manner) to the singularity of her owne will, they yet conceiue it to bee farre more requisite to reuert her reasons by faire meanes, then refute and refell them by force, sith loue and discretion hath still reference to that, and this relation still to choller, many times to repentance: wherupon minding her of the blessings which infallibly attend filiall obedience; and the miseries and curses which indiuidually wayt on contempt and disobedience, hoping that time will effect that which Importunitie cannot, they as then leaue her to her thoughts, and shee them to their care, caring for nothing so much, nay, I may wel say, for nothing else, then to see her affection diuorced from *Baretano*, and contracted and wedded to *Albemare*; who hauing curious correspondence and intelligence with them, he is euer and anon acertaind, not onely what hath, but what doeth passe betwixt them and their daughter; and withall, is aduised by them, to delay no time, but to frequent and haunt her as her *Ghost* and shadow; yea, and no more to conceale his affection and suite from her, but to acquaint all *Milan* therewith, sith it was no disparagement, but rather an equall honour for him to match with *Clara*, and *Clara* with him. Which concluded betwixt *Capello* and *Cassiana*, *Albe-*

mare is so farre from reiecting this aduise and counsell, as hee embraceth it with much ioy and delectation, and vowes (though with the perill of his life) to perseuere and pursue he rin mariage: To which end, authorized as well by his owne affection, as their authoritie, *Clara* is neither abroad nor at home, but hee meets her, giues away all time from himselfe, to giue himselfe to her: so as it seemes to the eye of the world, that *Capello's* house is now become his, and that his daughter *Clara* likewise shortly shall be: yea, hee addes such curiositie to his care, and such care to his affection in courting her, as shee cannot be eyther at *Massé*, or *Vespres*, but he is either with her, or neere her; and when in solemne pompe or zeale shee visits the *Domo* (or *Cathedrall Church*) of that Citie, and in it the Shrine of the new *Saint Charles*, then he wayts and attends on her at the Porch stayres, sometimes with his Coach, but many times (as the custome of *Millan* is) on his Foot-cloth, and prauncing *Barbarie* Horse, to conduct her home: yea, and not to sayle in any Complement of an accomplished Louer, besides the harmony of his own insinuation and solicitation, he greets her with rich presents, and salutes her with all varietie of melodious Musicke, and mellifluous Voyces: but all this notwithstanding, although hee euery way vse his best art and industry, and her father and mother their best skill to make her flexible to his desires, and their pleasure; yet shee as hauing her thoughts wholly bent and fixed on her deare & sweet *Baretano*, lookes haggard and auerse on *Albemare*, giuing him such generall answers, and cold entertainment, as hee seeth hee hath farre more reason to despaire then hope to obtaine her. Whereupon doub-

ting of her affection, hee hath againe recourse to her parents loue; who to confirme and seale it him, seeing faire meanes will not preuaile with their daughter, they resolute to vse force, and so to adde threats to their requests, and choller to their perswasions, to make her abandon *Baretano*, and embrace *Albemare*. But if the first preuaile not with her, the second cannot; for shee now tells them plainly, that shee neither can nor will affect any man for her husband but *Baretano*; and yet she is so farre from any determinate resolution to marry him, as shee affirms, that their will shall be her law, and their pleasure her resolution.

Whiles thus *Albemare* in the way of mariage seeks our fayre and sweet *Clara* publicly, no lesse doth *Baretano* priuately; and although with lesse vanitie and ostentation, yet he hopes with far more fortunacy & successe; as grounding his hopes vpon these reasons: That in heart and soule *Clara* is onely his, as both in soule and heart he is hers: so he entertaines her many times with his Letters, and yet not to shew himselfe a nouice in discretion, or a coward in affection, he making her content his commands, as shee did his desires her felicitie; hee in remote Churches and Chappels, (for whose number *Millan* exceeds *Rome*) hath both the happinesse and honour priuatly to meet her: where if they violate the sanctitie of the place, in conferring and cherishing their affections, yet they sanctifie their affections, in desiring that some Church or Chappell might inuest and crowne them with the religious honour, and holy dignitie of Mariage. For hauing ieast of Loue heretofore, now like true Louers, they hencefoorth resolute to loue, not in iest, but in earnest; and as of their two hearts, they haue already

dy made one, so now they meane and intend to dispose of their bodies, thereby to make one of two: And this is their sole desire, and this and onely this, is their chiefest delight, and most pleasingst desires and wishes.

But as it is the nature of Lone, for Louers to desire to see none but themselves, and yet are seene of many: so this their familiaritie and frequent meeting is againe reported to her father and mother, whereat they murmure with griefe, and griue with discontent and affliction: and now not to substract, but to adde to their vexation, it is resolued betweene our two young amorous Turtle Doues, *Baretano*, and his faire *Clara*, that he should publicly motion them for her in mariage; which hee in wonderfull faire tearmes, and orderly *Decorum*, (as well by his friends as himselfe) performeth. When contrary to his wishes, but not his expectation, they giue him so cold entertainment, and his suite such poore and sharpe acceptance, as they (in affection and zeale to *Albemare*) not onely deny him their daughter, but their house: an answer so inciuill, and therefore so iniust, as might giue a testimony of some way of their care, yet no way of their discretion to themselves, or affection to their daughter. And heere I must confesse, that I can difficultly define, whether this resolution and answer of *Capello* and *Castiana*, more delighted *Albemare*, discontented *Baretano*, or afflicted *Clara*: who although in the entrance of their Loues, their hopes seem'd to be nipt, and their desires crost by the frowns of their parents, yet they loue each other so tenderly & dearly, as these discontents notwithstanding, they will not retire, but are resolute to aduance in the progresse
of

of this their chaste and feruent affections, and although their commands endeuour to giue a law to her obedience, in not permitting her to be frequented by *Baretano*; yet her obedience is so inforced to take a more stronger of her affection, as despight her Parents malice and ielousie towards them, when they are sweetly sleeping in their beds, then is their daughter *Clara* waking with *Baretano*, and he with her; oftentimes walking and talking in the Arbours, and many times kissing & billing in the close galleries of the garden; which they cannot conceale or beare so closely, but her father & mother haue exact notice & intelligence therof by some of their trusty seruants, who they had purposely appointed as *Sentinells* to espie & discover their meetings. Whereupon (as much in hatred to *Baretano* as in affection to *Albemare*) knowing that if the cause be once remoued, the effect is subiect soone to follow and ensue; they very suddenly and priuately send away their daughter from *Millan* to *Modena* by Coach, there to be mewed and pent vp with the *Lady Emelia* her Aunt, and besides her waiting *Gentlewoman Adrianan*, one to accompany and conduct her, but onely *Albemare*, hoping that a small time, his presence and importunate solitations would deface the memory of *Baretano*, to ingraue his owne in the heart and thoughts of his sweet *Clara*. Who poore soule, seeing her selfe exiled and banished from the societie of her *Baretano's* sight and company, wherein vnder heauen she chiefly and onely delighted; she hereat, doth as it were drowne her selfe in the Ocean of her teares; storming aswell at the cruelty of her parents, as at her owne affliction and misfortune; and no lesse doth her *Baretano* for the absence of his sweet Saint
and

and deare Lady *Clara* : for as their affections, so their afflictions are equal; now mourning as much at each others absence, as formerly they reioyced and triumphed in their presence. But although the ielousie of *Capello* and *Cassiana* were very carefull to watch and obserue *Baretano* in *Milan*, and the zeale and affection of *Albemares* safety to guard, and sweetly to attend on *Clara* in *Modena*: Yet as fire suppressed, flames forth with more violence, and riuers stopped, ouerflow with more impetuositie; so despight of the ones vigilancy, and the others ielousie, though *Baretano* cannot be so happy and blessed to ride ouer to *Modena* to see and salute his *Clara*; yet loue, which is the refiner of inuentions and wit, and the polisher of iudgement, cannot yet detain him from visiting her with his letters, the which in respect of the hard accesse and difficult passage to her, he is inforced to send her by subtile meanes, and secret messengers; and the better to ouershadow the curiosity of his Arts, and the Art of his affection herein, he among many others, makes vse of a Fryer and a Hermite, for the conueyance of two letters to *Modena*, to his Lady: which (as fit agents for such amorous imployments) they (with more cunning and fidelity, then zeale and Religion) safely deliuered her, and likewise returned him her answers thereof. And because the feruency of their affections and constancies each to other, are more liuely depaynted and represented in these two, then in any other of their letters; therefore I thought my selfe in a manner bound, here to insert them, to the end to giue the better spirit and Grace to their *History*, and the fuller satisfaction and content to the curiositie of the Reader: That which *Ba-*

retano sent Clara vpon her departure from Millan to Modena by the Fryer, spake thus: I suppose thou wilt thinke

How iustly may I tearme my selfe vnforgotten, Sith I am enforced to be miserable before I know what belongs to happinesse: For if euer I found any content, or Heauen vpon Earth, it was onely in thy sweet presence, which thy sudden absence and v unexpected exile, hath now made, at least, my Purgatory, if not my Hell. Faire Clara iudge of thy Baretano by thy selfe, what a matchlesse grieue it is to my heart, and a heart-killing terrour to my thoughts, to see thee made captiue to my riual, and that the Fates and thy Parents seeme to bee so propitious to his desires, and so inexorable and cruell to mine: That I must liue alone in Millan without thee, and he alone in Modena with thee: which makes that, I know not, whether I more ennie his ioy, or lament and pittie mine owne sorrows and afflictions. But if I haue any sense or shadow of comfort in this my calamitie, it onely consists in this, that as thou carriedst away my heart with thee, so thou wilt vouchsafe to returne me thine in thy letter by a reciprocal requitall and exchange. For if thou neither bring me thy selfe, nor send me that, I may be sought in Millan, but found nowhere but in heauen: were I priuiledged by thy consent, much more authoriaed by thy command, I would speedily rather flie then poast to thee: for Faire and Deere Clara, as thou art my sole ioy and Soueraigne felicitie, so whiles I breath this ayre of life, thy will shall be my lawe, thy command my Compasse, and thy pleasure my resolution.

BARETANO.

Her answere returned by the Fryer to Baretano at Millan, was to this effect.

It

IT is for none but our selves to iudge how equally we participate and share of misery, in being deprived of each others presence. Thou teardest mine absence either thy purgatory, or thy hell; & my afflictions & torments for thine are so great, and withall so infinite, as I have all the equity and reason of the world to repute them not only one, but both. Thou art mistaken in the point of my thraldome, for whiles Albemare vowes himselfe my captiue, I disdayne to be his, and both vow and triumph to be onely Baretanos; I know not whether I haue brought thy heart with me to Modena, but sure I am, I left mine with thee in Millan: If my Parents seeme now pleasing and propitious to him, I am yet so farre from dispaire, as I confidently hope the Fates will not prooue cruell or inexorable to thee, and in thee to my selfe: but rather that a little time will change their resolutions and decrees, Sith they cannot our affections and constancy. If Clara be thy sole ioy and Soueraigne felicity, no lesse is Baretano hers: And albeit, I could wish either thou heere with my selfe in Modena, or I there with thee in Millan. Yet such is my Aunt Emmeliars care, and Albemares ielousie ouer me, that wert thou in this Citie, thou couldest difficultly see me, but impossibly speake with me; wherefore refraine a whiles, and let thy Iourney hither to me be ended ere began; yet with this promise and condition, that the cause thereof, thy affection to me, be began neuer to be ended: and thinke that my stay and exile heere shalbe as short, as either my best Art in my selfe can inuent, or truest zeale to thee suggest. In which Interim let vs solace our selves, and visit each other by the Ambassadors of our hearts, I meane our letters: And this resolve my deare Baretano, that during our absence wiles thou doest feast on my Idæa, I will not faile to surfeit on thine.

CLARA.

Baretano's other letter sent Clara to Modena by the Pilgrime, was couched and penned in these tearmes:

HAd not thy requests (in thy last letter) granted out a Prohibition against my desires and wishes, I had long since left Millan to haue seene Modena, & in it thy self my sweet & deere Lady; but I speake it to my present comfort, and future consolation and ioy, that it is excesse not want of affection which infuseth this prouident care & carefull prouidence to thy resolutions, to the end that thy returne make vs as ioyfull as thy departure sorrowfull, and consequently that the last prove as sweet vnto our hearts and thoughts, as the first was bitter: And yet beleene me deere Clara, that my affection is so intire and seruent to thee, because I know thine is reciprocally so to my selfe: that I deeme it not onely capable to make difficult things easie, but which is more, impossibilities possible: For, for thy sake what would I not attempt? and to enioy thy sight and presence what would I leaue vnperformed? But if thou wilt not permit me to come to thee to Modena, nor yet speedily resolute to returne to me to Millan: Sorrow will then preuent my Ioy, and Dispaire my Hope; For if thou hasten not thy arriual and our interuiw, sicknesse will be my death; wert thou as kind as faire, or as affectionate as I am seruent in affection, thou wilt then rather suffer me to lue with thee, then to die for thee: for in this rest confident, that if thou denie me that request, I cannot Nature this tribute, my affection this homage, or thy beautie this sacrifice.

BARETANO.

And Clara her answer hereunto returned to Milan to Baretano, by the foresaid Pilgrime was traced in these words:

The

THe last command of my Parents, & the first resolution of my aunt Emelia, & my suitor Albemarle, have now reduced me to so strict a Sequestration (or rather captivity) as quely my thoughts, hardly my pen, hath the freedom and power to signifie thee so much. But as calmes ensue tempests, and sun-shine showers, so I beseech thee to brooke it with as much patience, as I doe with griefe, and not onely hope, but resolute, that violence is neuer permanent, and all extreames subiect to reuolution and change. Wherefore my deare Baretano, consider and thinke with thy selfe, that my stay from Millan, and thy prohibition from Modena, hath this two-fold excuse, that is in my will, but not as yet in my power to performe; and this will rather hinder, then any way aduance the accomplishing of our desires; Sith a little time may effect that with my parents, which I feare importunity wil neuer, neither can thy heart so much long for my sight, or wish for my presence, as my soule doth for thine: Sith to giue thee but one word for all, thy selfe, and onely thy selfe, art both the life of my ioy, and the ioy of my life. A thousand times a day I wish Modena were Millan, and againe, as often that Albemarle were metamorphosed into Baretano. Therefore, I am so farre from preuenting thy ioy, as though as the price of my death, I am ready to sacrifice my life for the preservation of thine; as also for the banishing of thy dispayre: Write me not then of thy sicknesse, least thou as soone heare of my death, and I know not what request to denie thee, sith I haue already granted and giuen thee my selfe, which is all that either I can giue, or thou desire; cherish thy selfe for my sake, and I will thy remembrance for mine.

CLARA.

By these louing Letters of these our Louers, the Reader may obserue and remark, what a firme league, and strict and constant friendship there was contracted and settled betwixt them, and what a hell their absence was each to others thoughts and contemplations: In the meantime, whiles *Baresano* entertaines *Clara* with Letters, *Albemare* doth with wordes, wherein he vseth his best Rhetoricke and Oratory, to draw her to his desires; and withall, to listen and espy out, if there passe any passages of Letters, or other correspondency betwixt them: Which although *Clara* her affection to *Baresano* vow, and her discretion to her selfe resolute to conceale and obscure from *Albemare*, yet loe here fallles out a sinister and vnexpected accident, which will discouer and bewray it; yea, and of all sides, and to all parties produce griefe, sorrow, choller, and repentance, which in effect (briefly) is thus:

Clara had reason in her former Letter sent by the *Pilgrim*, to tearme this her sequestration in *Modona* a captiuitie, sith the bounds of her aunt *Emilias* two small Gardens, and the walles of her little Parke, were the limits wherein her liberty was confined, and her selfe as it were, immured: for farther she was not permitted to goe, except to the Church with her aunt in her Coach, but still accompanied by *Albemare*, who left no minutes nor occasions, as well to see her, as to bee seene of her. Now to giue some truce (though not peace) to her discontents, and thereby somewhat to calme the impetuositie of those tempests, which loue had stirred vp in her heart and thoughts for the absence of her *Baresano*, shee neuer better accompanied then when alone, sometime past away

away the irksomnesse of her time in walking in the Gardens, but many times in the Parke close shut, followed only by her wayting Gentlewoman *Adriana*: for in respect of her aunts vnkindnesse, and *Albemar*s ielousie, she would neither accept of her familiaritie, nor of his company. Now to the neere end of the Parke, not farre distant from the second Garden, was a curious walk, ranked about with many rowes of *Sycamore* trees, and at the farther end thereof a close ore-shadowed Bower; yea, so closely vayled, that the rayes of the Sunne could neither peepe in, to scorch the purenesse of her beautie; or to contend with the piercing lustre and resplendancy of her eyes: and to this Bower, in a fayre and cleare day, *Clara* (about three of the clocke after dinner) repaires, having in her hand to delude the time, the old amorous *Historie* of *Herb* and *Leander*, which was very lately illustrated, and newly reprinted in *Millan*, and wherein indeed for the conformitie of their loues with her owne, she tooke a singular delight to reade: but that which gaue sweeter musicke to her thoughts, and felicitie to her heart, and mind, were her *Baretano*'s two Letters, (which we haue formerly seene) and which as then she had purposely brought with her to suruey and peruse; yea, she reades them ore againe & againe; and to write the truth, more oftner then there are words, or I thinke sillables therein contained: but when she descends to his name, shee cannot refraine from kissing it; yea, and such is her tender loue to *Baretano*, as she bedewes it with her teares; a thousand times she wished her selfe with him, or he with her, and bitterly blames the crueltie of her parents, for separating their bodies, sith shee not onely hoped, but
afflu-

assured her selfe, that God had conioyned, and vnired their hearts. But whiles shee in the middest of these passionate extasies seemes to be rapt vp into the heauen of ioy, at the perusal of these Letters of *Barentino*, and then againe to be plunged into the hell of sorrow, at the consideration and remembrance of his absence, shee heares a voyce, which she thinks is not farre off from her, when looking forth the Bower, and deeming it to be that of her wayting Gentlewoman, whom she saw somewhat neere her gathering of Strawberries, and wilde Lillies, shee within a flight shot from her, perceiues it to be her *Louer*, (but not her loue,) *Albemare*, who knowing her there in the Bower, and for want of other talke, speaking to the Echo, she guessed by his course, (wherein she was not deceiued) that he had an intent to salute and speake with her, which to preuent, because it wholly displeased her, to be cumbred with the company of so vnwelcomed a guest as himselfe, she hastily folds vp her letters in her handkercher, and clapping them (at least as she thought) into the pocket of of her gowne, takes her booke in her hand, and calling *Adriana*, trips away backe towards the garden, by the other side of the Parke, purposely to eschew and auoid him, as indeed she did.

Albemare grieues to see *Clara's* coynesse and cruelty toward him, although she were departed forth the Parke from him, yet his affection is so feruent to her, as he will needs ascend the Bower, esteeming it not onely a kind of content, but a blessing to his thoughts; sith he cannot be where she is, yet to be where she hath beene: when thinking to mount the stayres of the bower, he vnexpected at the foot thereof,

of, finds the two letters whereof we haue formerly spoken, which it seemes slipt foorth of *Clara's* handkercher, as she was putting it into her pocket: *Albemare* taking vp the letters, and seeing them directed to his sweet *Clara*, he betwixt the extreames of loue and ioy, kisseth them againe and againe for her sake: when sitting downe in the Bower, he betakes himselfe to read and peruse them, verily expecting and hoping to gather and draw some thing from them which might tend to aduance the proceesse of his affection towards her: But when he had read the first, he was so extreamely perplexed and afflicted, as he had hardly the patience to peruse the second, and yet at length hastily and passionatly running it ouer, and seeing by all the circumstances thereof, that it was in vaine for him any longer to hope for *Clara*, sith shee was *Baretano's*, and *Baretano* hers, he like one Lunaticke, stampes with his foot, throwes awas his hat, teares his haire for very grieve and choller, now thinking to teare the letters, and then to offer violence to himselfe: But when the fumes and flames of this his folly were ouerblowen, and that he had againe recalled his wits to take place in the proper seat of his iudgement and discretion; then taking vp his hat, and pulling it downe his eares, he leaues the Bower and Parke, and so going into the house, shewes them to the Lady *Emelia* her Aunt, who prayes him not to dispaire, but that *Baretano's* letters notwithstanding, he himselfe shall shortly marry her Niece *Clara*; only she prayes him for the two letters, because she affirms, she will to morrow send them to *Millan* to her father and mother. Wherein he saith, he will take aduise of his pillow; when fasting out his supper, he betakes him-

himselfe to his bed, to see whether he can sleepe away those his passions and vexations. And by this time *Clara* going to locke vp these two aforesaid letters in her trunke, she finds her handkercher, but misseth her letters; whereat blushing for shame, and then againe looking pale for sorrow, grieve and anger, she speedily sends away *Adriana* to the Bower, to looke them, who returnes without them, and then she knowes for certaine that *Albemare* hath found them: whereupon for meere grieve and anger, feigning her selfe sick, she withdrawes her selfe to her chamber, and there presently betakes her selfe to her bed.

I may well say that *Clara* & *Albemare* betake themselves to their beds; but I am sure not to their rest: For grieve and loue so violently acte their severall parts in their hearts and thoughts, as sigh they doe, but sleepe they cannot: Yea their passions and sorrowes are as different as their desires; for as *Albemare* now grieues that he hath found these letters, so doth *Clara* that shee hath lost them; and as he vowes not to restore her them, so she neither dares, and yet disdaieth to demand them of him: Yea againe, which is more, as their sorrowes are different, so are their pretended consolations, at least if I may properly and truly tearme them consolations: For as *Clara*, although shee haue lost her *Baretano's* letters, doth yet reioyce that she still retains the writer and Authour thereof ingrauen and characterized in her heart: so doth *Albemare*, that now fully knowing *Baretano* to be his riuall, and who by all probability is like to beare his mistris from him, he hath (as he iniustly conceiues, a iust reason to be reuenged, and a true occasion to fight with him: but as *Clara's* comfort and consolati-

on

on herein proceeds from true affection, so doth the vanitie and impiety of this resolution of *Albemares* from hellish malice, and deuillish indignation: yea, although the night doth or should bring counsell, yet as *Clara* passeth it ouer onely with sighes, so doth *Albemare* with fumes and reuenge against *Baretano*, vowing that he will in the morne towards *Millan*, and there trie his fortune, either to kill him or to bee killed of him, in a *Duell*; to which end he is no sooner ready, but he acquaints the Lady *Emelia* with his intended iourney, but not with his resolution to fight with *Baretano*, and the same he doth to the Empreffe of his thoughts, and *Queene* of his desires) *Clara*, demanding her if she please to command him any seruice for *Millan*; who both blushing and paling hereat, her affection to *Baretano*, hauing now made her expert in the subtilties of loue, she well knowes what wind driues *Albemare* to *Millan*: and therefore guided by discretion, and not by passion, she returnes him this answer: That hauing neither reason nor desire to command him, she only prayes him to remember her humble duety to her Father and mother, and so wisheth his iourney prosperous: which answer of hers (being indeed no other then *Albemare* expected) he yet aduanceth to kisse her at parting, which her ciuility though not her affection granted him; not so much as once dreaming or suspecting that he conceived the least thought or intent to fight with her sweet *Baretano*, and so he takes horse, hauing onely one seruant with him.

Albemare being arriued at Saint *Remie*, a small Towne within fiftene miles of *Millan*, he resolues to dine there, which he doth: and to auoid the heate of

the day, then betakes himselfe to sleepe an howre or two; being awaked, he commands his man to make ready his horse, and seeing the Hoast of the house in his chamber, enquires of him if there were any Gentlemen in the house riding for *Millan*, who as soone returnes him this vnlook'd for, and vnexpected answer; that there was a braue Gentleman in his house named *Signior Baretano*, who was to ride thither some two houres hence. *Albemare* no sooner heares the name of *Baretano*, but his very heart blood flasheth vp in his face, when demanding him againe what manner of Gentleman he was, he told him he was a tall slender yong Gentleman, with neuer a haire on his face, and out of this window quoth he, you may now see him walking in the garden; when *Albemare* looking forth, sees indeed that it was his very riual *Baretano*; when enquiring further of the Hoast what followers he had with him, hee told him that then he had none, but sometimes when he came thither, either to take the ayre, or breath his horse, he was attended by two or three, and so the Hoast leaues him, not once suspecting of any difference betweene them. *Albemare* seeing his enemy (because his riual) brought to him, whom he formerly resolued to seeke and find out, assumes a base and a bloody resolution to set vpon him in the high way disguised, and there to venter his owne life, to depriue him of his: which to effect he will haue no eye witnesses of this his ignoble and trecherous businesse; and therefore purposely sends away his man to *Millan* before him, and so slipping into the towne, provides himselfe of a maske or visard; then takes his horse, and rather like a theefe then a Gentleman, lurkes behind a Groue (some three miles

miles from Saint *Remy*) attending *Baretano's* coming, who poore harmelesse young Gentleman, harbouring and breathing no other thoughts and wishes then charitie to all the world, and pure and seruent affection to his faire and deare *Clara*, likewise takes his horse, and drawes homeward toward *Millan*, when being arriued to the place where *Albemare* secretly lay in ambush for him, he furiously and suddenly rusheth foorth, and with his Rapier drawn in his hand, runnes *Baretano* into his right arme, who feeling the wound almost as soone as he saw his enemy who gaue it him, he is at first as it were amazed hereat; when thinking him by his maske to be a *Bandetti*, who were then very busie in *Lombardy*, but especially in that Dutchie of *Millan*, he told him that all the coyne he had, which was some ten double Pistols in gold, and two Duckats in siluer, were at his seruice, but to fight in his defence he would not: Not quoth he, that he was any way a Coward, but that he affirmed he was lately affianced and ingaged to a young Lady: so that he perfectly knew that her affection was so deare and tender towards him, as either the losse or preservation of his life would be that of hers: *Albemare* galled and touch't to the quicke with this his heart killing answer to him, is wholly inflamed with choller against him, when rushing towards him, he deliuers him these words: Villaine it is not thy gold but thy life which I seeke, and then straying himselfe to runne *Baretano* thorow, loe the string of his Maske breakes, where *Baretano* apparently sees it is his Riual *Albemare*: whereat such is his tender affection to his sweete and fayre *Clara*, that hee who before turned erauen,

and would not fight for his owne sake, is now cheerefully resolved not onely to fight, but if occasion require, to dye for hers: and so returning the villaine to *Albemares* throat, hee instantly drawes, and ioynes with him: and if *Albemare* be resolute in fighting, no lesse valiant and couragious is *Baretano*; for the remembrance of his *Clara's* sweet Idea, and fresh delicious beautie, infuseth such life to his valour, and such generositie, and animositie to his courage, as he deales his blowes roundly, and his thrusts freely, making *Albemare* know, that his Rapier is of an excellent temper, and yet his heart of a better: And *Albemare* seeing hee must buy his victory dearer then hee expected, and disdaining to be out-braued and beaten by a boy, pluckes vp his best spirits and courage to him, and so likewise behaues himselfe manfully and valiantly: in such sort, that within lesse then a quarter of an houre, *Baretano* hath giuen him fise wounds, and he *Baretano* three, when the *Count of Martingue* passing that way in his Coach towards *Millan*, and seeing two Gentlemen so busily fighting, he cries out to his Coach-man, to gallop away with all celeritie, and so parts them; when seeing them full of blood, sweat, and dust, hauing his Chyrurgion still in his traine with him, he out of an honourable courtesie and charitie, intreats and accompanies them to the next house, where he causeth their wounds to be drest and bound vp; when by their apparell seeing them to be *Millanefes*, is desirous to know their quarrell, and profers his best assistance to reconcile and make them friends: but their hearts are so great, and their malice so implacable, as they both thanke the *Count* for his noble courtesie, but beseech him to pardon

don them, in obscuring their names and quarrell; and yet he is so noble and generous, as he will not so leaue them, but seeing them shrewdly wounded (though not he thinks mortally) he for their greater ease and safetie, causeth two of his *Gentlemen* to mount their horses, and takes them both vp into his Coach with him, and so brings them within the Gates of *Millan*, where after they had seuerally rendred him many thanks for his *Courtesie* and *Honour*, hee commends them both to their good Fortunes, and so leaues them.

Baretano and *Albemare* being thus arriued at *Millan*, they conceale their fighting, and so keepe their chambers, till they haue secured their wounds; when *Albemare* visits *Capello* and his Lady *Cassiana*, & reports to them the health & dutie of their daughter, as also her auersnesse towards him, and withall shewes her *Baretano's* two Letters to her, wherby it is apparant, that she is so wholly his, as he himselve is sure neuer to obtaine or enioy her. Her father and mother at the first seeme to hang their heads at this newes, and the perusal of the Letters; but at last bid him not despaire, but be couragious, for he and onely hee shall be their sonne in law. But *Albemare* considering that for the tearme of at least sixe moneths, he *Camelion-like* had onely been fed with the ayre of these their vaine promises, and that he perfectly knew that *Clara* onely intended to marry *Baretano*, and none but him, his loue to her was so tender and feruent, as hee cannot conceiue the shadow of any hope how to obtaine her for his wife in this world, before hee haue sent *Baretano* into another; when being constant in his resolution thereof to himselve, because hee was resolute in his con-

constancy and affection to *Clara*: no reason, no Religion, nor his Conscience, nor his Soule, can diuert him from this bloody designe, from this murtherous and therefore damnable proiect: Feeding therefore on Malice, and boyling with Reuenge towards *Baretano*, he not as a Gentleman, but rather degenerating from the vertue and honour of that honourable degree and qualitie, bethinkes himselfe either by pistoll or poyson how hee may treacherously dispatch him: whereon ruminating and pondering (as malice and reuenge may perchance slumber, but difficultly sleep) the *Deuill* who is neuer absent in such hellish stratagems and occasions, giues him meanes (though by a contrary course) how to dispatch him: For on a day descending the stayres of the *Domo*, hee sees *Pedro*, and *Leonardo*, (two Souldiers, or rather *Braues* of the Castle of *Pauia*) passe by him, with whom hee had been formerly acquainted, but so poorely apparelled, as weighing their bloody humours by their necessity, he (in fauour of money) thinkes them very fit *Agents* and *Instruments*, to murther and make away *Baretano*, to which end, to play the *Practique* part as well as the *Theorique*, & so to reduce this his bloudy contemplation into action, hee sends his man *Valerio* after them, and prayes them to repaire to him in the *Cloysters* of *Borromeos* Palace, for that he hath a businesse to impart them of great importance for their profits. *Valerio* ouertakes them, deliuers them his masters pleasure; who netled with this word Profit, they repayre to the *Rendeuous*, and meet *Albemare*; when hauing refreshed their acquaintance, and hee sworne them to secrecy, he as a wretched and perfidious Gentleman, acquaints them with his desire,

some

some ten dayes hence to haue them murder *Seignior Barotano* in the street by night, and to giue it out, that it was done by some *Spaniards* of the *Viceroyes* Guard, and that he will giue them an hundred Ducatons in hand, and leaue them as much more with his man *Valerio*, which they shal receiue of him, when they haue dispatcht him; and for his owne part, some foure or fiue dayes hence he will away for *Modena*, to cast the better varnish and colour that hee was innocent thereof, and had no finger at all in the businesse.

Pedro and *Leonardo*, seeing that *Albemare* proffered them gold, which they so much wanted and desired, like two limbes of the Deuill, and as a couple of hellish Blood-hounds, not only promise, but swear to him punctually, in al respects to performe his desires, & so they touch their first hundred Duckatons, which being the pledg & price of innocent blood, it wil assuredly cost them deare, and draw downe vengeance, ruine & confusion on their heads from heauen, when they least think or dreame thereof. *Albemare* hauing settled this his bloody and mournfull businesse with *Pedro* and *Leonardo*, he is againe solicited by *Capello*, and *Castiana*, to returne to their daughter in *Modena*: wherunto he willingly consenteth; when armed with their Letters to her, wherein they charge her on their commands & blessing, to dispose her selfe to affect & marry him, he within foure dayes departeth. But hauing secretly reuealed his fight with *Barotano* to some of *Capello* his chiefeest and most confident seruants, they yet loue and honour their young Lady *Clara* so well in her absence, as they send her the true relation and intelligence thereof, which is at *Modena* a little

before *Albemare*, the which being vnknowne to him, he is no sooner arriv'd there, but hee salutes first the Aunt *Emilia*, then her Neece and his Mistris, *Clara*: to whom having deliuered her Parents Letters, she stepping aside to the window, reades them; and so returning to him againe, gives him this sharpe and bitter welcome: *My father and mother command mee to loue thee; but how can I, sith upon the high way, thou basely and treacherously attemptedst to kill my deare Baretano, whom I loue a thousand times dearer then the whole world?* when with teares in her eyes, and choller in her lookes, shee very suddenly and passionately flings from him, whereat *Emilia* wondreth, and hee both stormes and grieues; and so they betake themselves to their chambers, where *Albemare* throwing himselfe on his bed, sayth thus to himselfe: Vnkind and cruell *Clara*, if thou take my fighting with *Baretano* thus tenderly, how wilt thou brooke the newes of his death? On the other side, *Clara* grieues as much at her *Baretano's* wounds, as shee reioyceth at his fastie and recouery; yea, so tender is her affection to him, as she a thousand times wishes, that the blood hee lost, had streamed from her owne heart. Againe, knowing his wounds free from danger, shee cannot but smile, and delight to see his deare and true affection to her, in remembring that he would not fight for his owne sake, and yet was ready, yea and valiantly hazarded to loose his life for hers; and in these amorous conceits & contemplations shee pensively driues away the time, admiring and wondring that all this while shee heares not from her *Baretano*: But alas, alas! shee shall heare too too soone of him, though indeed neuer more from him: for these execrable

wret-

wreches, *Pedro* and *Leonardo*, some foure dayes after *Albemar*s departure to *Modena*, they according to their promise and oath given him, like two most bloody and butcherly villaines, cruelly assault and murder this harmelesse and innocent young Gentleman *Baretano*, in the streets of *Millan* by night, with no lesse then seuen seuerall wounds, whereof foure were cleane thorow his body; and so giues it out (as it was formerly concluded) that hee was murdered by some *Spaniards* of the *Viceroyes* Guard: when the same night they repaire to *Valerio*, acquaint him therewith, receiue their other hundred Duckatons, and so prouide for their safetie in the citie: but that bloody money, and this cruell murder, will in the end cost them dearer, then either they imagine, or dreame of.

Whiles *Millan* ratleth with the newes of *Baretano*'s bloody and vntimely end, as his owne friends infinitely lament and grieue, so *Capello* and his wife *Castiana* cannot refraine from reioycing thereat, as now assuring themselves that *Albemare* shall shortly bee their sonne in law: and for *Valerio*, hee with all possible speed writes away thereof to *Modena*, to his Master, who entertaines this newes with infinite ioy and delectation, and presently acquaints the Lady *Emilia* therewith, whereat she reioyceth, and he triumphes; but they both resolute as yet to conceale it from *Clara*, because they know she wil euen dissolve and melt into teares therat. But foure dayes after are not fully expired, but her father & mother aduertise their daughter *Clara*, their sister *Emilia*, and *Albemare* thereof, by a Gentleman, a seruant of theirs, whom they purposefully send to *Modena*, to bring backe *Clara*, and *Albemare*

to *Millan*. But it is for none but Louers, to conceiue or iudge', with what extreatme excelle of griefe and immoderate sorrow our poore *Clara* vnderstands this heart-piercing newes of her *Baretano's* mournfull and sorrowfull death: for shee is no sooner aduertised thereof, but shee throwes off her attyre, teares her hayre, and twice following falles to the ground in a swoound, so as *Emilia*, *Albemare*, *Adriana*, and her fathers Gentleman can hardly referch and keepe life in her: but being come againe to her senses and selfe, and faintly opening her cloudy eyes to the beames of the Sunne, who enamoured of her beautie (as well in pitie as loue) came to comfort and reuiue her: shee wringing her hands, then crossing her armes, and lastly, looking vp towards *Heauen*, betwixt sighing and speaking, breathes forth these mournfull, passionate, and affectionate speeches:

O my *Baretano*, my sweet and deare *Baretano*, and shall thy wretched *Clara* liue thou being dead? when the violence of her affection and sorrow making her forget her selfe, and her God, she secretly vnsheathes her knife, and then and there would haue stabbed her selfe to death, had not *Albemare* and her Aunt *Emilia* speedily stept to her assistance, and preuented her, by wresting it from her; when conducting her to the Garden, to take the ayre, shee prayes *Albemare* to leaue her, and in his absence often againe repeating the name of her deare *Baretano*, she a thousand times wisheth that her life had ransomed his, vowing that although she were a woman, yet if she knew his murderers, shee would flie to their eyes, and teare out their hearts, in meere reuenge of his inhumane and cruell death: when her sorrowes are so infinite, and her

her grieve so vnsupportable, as shee cannot long remain in one place, but withdrawes her selfe from the garden to her chamber, whither her Aunt *Emilia* carefully accompanies her, lies with her that night to comfort her, who poore afflicted young Lady, neyther can nor will be comforted: so as the next morning, had not her Aunt powerfully preuented and stopped her, shee had then vndoubtedly entred the *Nunnery* of her owne name, *Saint Clara*, and in that retyred and obscure life there ended her dayes in *Modena*; resolving in true affection and zeale to her dead *Baretano*; neuer thenceforth either to see her parents, or *Millan*: but being diuerted and comforted by some Diuines, and many Ladies of that Citie, shee brooking her sorrowes as patiently as she may, (with much solicitation) after ten dayes, permits herselfe to be conueyed home to *Millan*, where although shee were very cheerefully receiued, & ioyfully entertained of her father and mother, yet she likewise went nere to haue there mewed her selfe vp a spirituall sister in the *Nunnery* of the *Annunciation*; but that againe she was preuented: whereat grieuing, she yet takes on mourning attire, and vowes to weare it a whole yeare for his sake: when to make herselfe (as shee was) both a true Louer, and a true mourner to the memory of her dead *Baretano*, shee oftentimes steales into *Saint Euphemias* Church, where hee was buried, and there bedewes his tombe with her teares, liuing so pensiuely, and disconsolately, that although she liue in the world, yet it seemes she neither is, nor long will be of the world.

But as women are but women, and as Time is a soveraigne remedy for all diseases and sorrowes, so

about some ten moneths after, the incessant importunitie of her father and mother, and the continuall tender respect and obseruant courtesie of *Albemare* towards her, make her somewhat neglect and forget the memory of *Baretano*, and now to looke on him with a more pleasing and fauourable eye then before. But here (again) a consideration makes her affection dye towards *Albemare*, almost as soone as it beginnes to liue: For why (quoth shee) should shee affect or loue him, who at Saint *Remy* gaue her *Baretano* three seuerall wounds? But then Loue againe steps in, and thus pleads with her for *Albemare*: That he receiued fīue wounds, and gaue *Baretano* but three, which made him lose far more blood then *Baretano*: and yet that this attempt of his was onely occasioned through his affection to her, and onely for her sake, as louing her dearer then his owne life; which againe gaue her thoughts such satisfaction, as weighed downe and vanquished, as well by the power and prayers of her parents, as also by the endlesse sighes, letters, and presents of *Albemare*: the yeare is no sooner expired, and her mourning weeds and attire done away, but to their owne hearts content, and the vnspeakable ioy of their parents, they in *Millan* (with great pompe and brauery) are very solemnly married. But this marriage of theirs shall not proue so prosperous as they expect and hope: For *God* in his all-seeing *Providence*, hath decreed to disturbe the tranquillitie, and serenity thereof, and to make them feele the sharpe and bitter showers of affliction and misery, which briefly doth thus surpriſe and befall them.

Albemare and *Clara*, haue hardly been married together a yeare and quarter, but his hote loue begins to

to waxe cold and frozen to her; yea, albeit shee affected him truely and tenderly, yet hee continually neglecting her, and no longer delighting in the sweetnesse of her youth, and the freshnesse of her beaurie, his lustfull eyes and thoughts carry his lasciuious selfe abroad among *Courtezans*, when they should be fixed on her, and resident at home with his chaste and faire *Lady*: so as his infidelitie proouing her grieve and torments, and his vanitie and ingratitude, her vn-speakable affliction, and vexation, shee with infinite sighs and teares, repents her matching him, & a thousand times wisheth she had been so happy and blessed to haue dyed *Baretano's* Martyr, and not so vnfortunate and accursed to liue to see her selfe *Albemar's* wife: and yet were there any hope of his reformation, shee could then prefixe bounds to her calamities and sorrows: But seeing that his vices grew with his age, and that euery day he became more vitious & vnkind to her then other, her hopes are now wholly turned into despaire, her mirth into mourning; yea, her inward discontents so apparantly bewray themselues in her outward sorrowfull complexion and countenance, that the Roses of her cheekes are metamorphosed into Lillies, and her heart so wholly taken vp with anguish, and surprized with sorrow, as she wisheth that her bed were her graue, and her selfe in Heauen with *God*; because shee could find no comfort heere on Earth with her husband: But beyond her expectation, *God* is providing to redresse her grieve, and to remedy her afflictions by a very strange and vnlooked for accident.

The *Providence* and *Iustice* of *God*, doth now againe refetch bloody *Pedro*, to act another part vpon the

Stage

Stage and Theatre of this History : For hauing spent that money lewdly, which he before got damnably of *Albemare*, his wants are so great, and his necessitie so vrgent, as hauing played the murtherer before, he makes no conscience nor scruple now to play the thiefe: and so by night breakes into a Jewellers shop, named *Signior Fiamata*, dwelling in the great place before the *Domo*, and there carries away from him, a small Trunke or Casket, wherein were some vncut *Saphyrs* and *Emeralds*, with some *Venice* Christall pendants for Ladies to weare in their eares, and other rich commodities: but *Fiamata* lying ouer his shop, and hearing it, and locking his doore to him for feare of hauing his throat cut, giues the out-cry and alarum footh the window, which ringing in the streets, make some of the neighbours, and also the watch approach and assemble; where finding *Pedro* running with a Casket vnder his arme, he is presently hem'd in, apprehended and imprisoned, and the Casket tooke from him, and againe restored to *Fiamata*; when knowing that he shal die for this robbery, as a iust punishment & iudgement of God, now sent him for formerly murthering of *Baretano*, he hauing no other hope to escape death but by the means of *Albemare*, he sends earely the next morning for his man *Valerio*, to come to the prison to him, whom he bids to tel his master *Albemare* from him, that being sure to be condemned for this robberie of his, if he procure him not his pardon, he will not charge his soule any longer with the murther of *Baretano*, but will on the ladder reueale how it was hee who hired himselfe and *Leonardo* to performe it; *Valerio* reporting this to his master, it affrights his thoughts, and terrifies his conscience

science and courage, to see himselfe reduced to this misery, that no lesse then his life must now stand to the mercy of this wretched varlet *Pedro's* tongue. But knowing it impossible to obtaine a pardon for him, and therefore high time to prouide for his owne safety, by stopping of *Pedro's* mouth; he resolues to heaue *Ossa* vpon *Pellion*, or to adde murther to murther, and now to poyson him in prison, whom he had formerly caused to murther *Baresano* in the street, to the end he might tell no tales on the ladder, thinking it no ingratitude or sinne, but rather a iust reward and recompense for his former bloody seruice; so to feed *Pedro* with false hopes thereby to charme his tongue to silence, and to lull his malice asleepe, he speedily returns *Valerio* to prison to him, who bids him feare nothing, for that his master hath vowed to get him his pardon, as he shall more effectually heare frō him that night: whereat *Pedro* reioyceth and triumpheth, telling *Valerio* that his master *Albemare* is the most generous and brauest Cavalier of *Lombardy*. But to nip his ioyes in their vntimely blossomes, and to disturbe the harmony of his false content; that very day as soone as hee hath dined, hee is tryed and arraigned before his Iudges; and being apparantly conuicted and found guilty of this robbery, he is by them adiudged to be hanged the next morne, at a gibbet purposely to be erected before *Fiamata's* house, where he committed his delict and crime: which iust sentence not onely makes his ioy strike faile to sorrow, but also his pride and hopes let fall the Peacocks plumes to humilitie and feare: But his onely trust and comfort, yea, his last hope & refuge is in *Albemare*, who hearing him to be condemned, to be execu-

ted the next morning: he is enforced to play his bloody prize that night, and so in the euening sends *Valerio* to prison to him with a Capon, and two Fiascoes (or bottles) of wine, for him to make merry, informing him that he hath obtained his pardon, and that it is written, and wants nothing but the *Viceroyes* signe to it, which he shall haue to morrow at breake of day. But the wine of one of the bottles was intermixed with strong and deadly poyson, which was so cunningly tempered, as it carried no distatefull, but a pleasing relish to the pallate: *Valerio* like an execrable villaine, prouing as true a seruant to his master, as a rebellious and false one to his God, he punctually performs this fearefull and mournfull businesse; and hauing made *Pedro* twice drunke, first with his good newes, and then with his poysoned wine, hee takes leaue of him that night, and committing him to his rest, promiserh to be with him very early in the morning with his pardon. When this miserable and beastly prophane wretch, neuer thinking of his danger, or death; of God, or his soule; of heauen, or hell, betakes himselfe to his bed, where the poyson spreading ore his vitall parts, soone bercaue him of his breath, sending his soule from this life and world to another.

Now the next morning very early as the Gaoler came to his chamber, to bid him prepare to his execution, he finds him dead and cold in his bed; and thus was the miserable end of this bloody and inhumane murtherer (and theefe) *Pedro*: who yet for example sake was one whole day hang'd by the heeles in his shirt, at his appointed place of execution; because his Iudges deemed that he had cruelly poysoned and made away himselfe. And now doth *Albemare* againe

gaine reioyce and triumph to see he hath auoyded that dangerous shelve and rocke, whereon he was very likely to haue suffred shipwracke, yea, and now hee thinks himselfe so absolutely safe and secure; as hee holds it impossible that either his murthering of *Baretano*, or his poysoning of *Pedro* can any way reflect on him, or hencefoorth produce him any further stormes or tempests: but his hopes and ioyes will deceiue him, for God who is the infallible reuenger of innocent blood, will not so leaue him, but ere long, when he least thinks or dreames thereof, not onely in his prouidence detect these his foule crimes, but in his iustice seuerly punish them, and the Readers curiositie shall not goe farre to see it; for as to a guiltie conscience, it is the pleasure of the Lord, that one misery befall him in the necke and nicke of the other, so *Albemare* is no sooner freed of *Pedro* in *Millan*, but behold, hee is afresh intangled and assaulted with *Leonardo* (his other hired murtherer) in *Pauia*: who hauing their prodigally rioted away his hundred Duckatons, and also run himselfe farre in debt; his Creditors ioyne together, and so clap him prisoner, where hauing no other hope for his freedome and libertie, but to relie on *Albemare*, he writes him a letter to *Millan*, wherein he acquaints him with his pouerty and misery, and prayes him (for the obtrayuing of his liberty) either to lend or giue him fifty Duckatons: *Albemare* receiues this letter, but forgetting his former seruice, as also thinking it onely a fetch of *Leonardo* to fetch him ouer for so many Duckatons, as God would haue it, he very inconsiderately burnes this his letter, and answereth it with silence: but he shall repent it, when it will be too late, and out of his power

to remedy this his ingratitude and indescretion.

Leonardo hauing at least fiftene dayes expected an answer from *Albemare*, and receiuing none, he is extreamely incensed and intraged to see himselfe thus sleighted and forgotten of him, when exasperated by his misery, and animated by his extream pouerty and indigence, in that he is now enforced to sell away his apparell, and so to vncloth his backe, thereby to feed his belly, he intends no more to request and pray him, but now resolues to touch him to the quicke, the which he doth in these few lines which he sends him to *Millan* by a messenger of purpose:

IF my first letter preuayled not with thee for the loane or gift offifty Ducatons, to free me from this my miserable imprisonment, I make no doubt but this my second will, for being a Souldier, I giue thee to vnderstand, that I hold it farre more generous to hange then starue; sith as a halter is onely the beginning of my friends sorrowes: so it will likewise be the end of all mine owne miseries: yea, if thou speedily furnish and accomplish not my request, although it cost me my life, I will no longer conceale how thou diddest hire *Pedro* and my selfe for two hundred Duckatons to giue Signior *Baretano* his death, which at thy request wee performed. Thinke then how neere my secrecie concerns thy life, sith when I suffer death, I know thou hast but a short and poore time left thee to suruine mee: Therefore thanke thy selfe, if thy ingratitude turne my affection into contempt, and that into reuenge and malice.

LEONARDO.

Now although *Leonardo* meane not as hee write, yet this his messenger comming to *Millan*, and not finding

finding *Albemare* at his house, hee knowes not (and is resolute) what to doe, either to stay his comming in, or to deliuer his Letter to some of his seruants: But wayting at his doore till late in the euening, and hearing no newes of him, he giues it to *Valerio*, and (without telling him from whom, or whence it came) prays him safely to deliuer it to his Master, and that hee will repaire thither the next morning for an answer. *Valerio* claps the Letter into his pocket, awayting his masters comming: but hee is so bad a husband to himselfe, and so disloyall, and vnkinde a one to his chaste and faire wife, as hee was out all night with his Courtisans, which good and vertuous Lady, euen pierceth her heart with griefe and sorrow. Now *Valerio* sceing his Master absent, his comming incertaine, and himselfe inforced to goe fooorth about his affaires, he placeth the Letter vpon a Cupboard neere his masters study, that it might be apparant to his eye when he came in, and so departs.

But here the mercy and prouidence of *God* inuites the *Christian* Reader, to admire and wonder at the strange discouery and detection of this Letter: for as *Albemare* (more for sport then charitie) kept a man-foole of some fortie yeres old in his house, who indeed was so naturally pecuifh, as not *Millan*, hardly *Italy*, could match him for simplicitie. It so chanced, that this harmelesse foole gate into the roome after *Valerio*, and saw him put vp this Letter on the cupboard: Now, as Children and Fooles may in some sort be tearmed cousin germaine to Apes, so as soone as *Valerio* was departed, this foole (no doubt ledde wholly by the direction and finger of *God*, rather then

by his owne proper ignorance and simplicitie) gets into the chamber, and taking a stoolet to ascend the Cupboard, he brings away the Letter, which both in the hall and yard he tosses and dandles in his hand, as if this newe found play gaue delight and content to his extrauagant and simple thoughts : when , behold our sweet and vertuous *Clara* comming from Saint *Ambrose* Church, where she had been to here *Vespres*, and seeing a faire letter fast sealed in the fooles hand, shee enquires of him from whence hee had it : who singing and hopping , and still playing with the Letter , shee could get no other answere from him, but *That it was his Letter, and that God had sent it him, that God had sent it him* : which speeches of his , he often redoubled. When *Clara* weighing his wordes , and considering out of whose mouth they came, her heart instantly began to grow , and her colour to rise, as if *God* and her soule prompted her , that shee had some interest in that letter: wherupon snatching it from the foole , whom she left crying in the Hall for the losse therof : she seeing it directed to her Husband, goes to the parlor, attended by *Adriana*, & there sitting down in a chaire, & breaking vp the scales therof, she begins to read it; but when she draws towards the conclusion thereof, and finds that it was her husband *Albemare's* who had caused her deare Louer and Friend *Baretano* to be murdered : then not able to containe her selfe for sorrow, she throwes her selfe on the floore , and weepes and sighes so mournfully , as the most obduratest and flintiest heart could not choose but relent into pitie to see her : for sometimes shee lookt vp to heauen , and then againe deiecting her eyes to earth, now wringing her hands, and then crossing her armes, in

in such disconsolate and afflicted manner, as *Adriana* could not likewise refraine from teares to behold her: when after a deepe and profound silence, shee bandying and euaporating many volleys of far fetched sighes into the ayre, shee commaunding *Adriana* forth, the doore shut, with the two extremities of passion and sorrow, she alone vtters these mournfull speeches to her selfe:

And shall *Clara* liue to vnderstand, that her *Barentano* was murthered for her sake, and by her vnfortunate husband *Albemare*? and shall she any more lye in bedde with him, who so inhumanely hath layen him in his vntimely and bloody graue? And *Clara*, *Clara*, wilt thou proue so vngratefull to his memory, and to the tender affection he bore thee, as not to lament, not to seeke to reuenge this his disasterous and cruell end? when againe, her teares interrupting her words, and her sighes her teares, shee entring into a further consultation with her thoughts and Conscience, her heart and her soule at last continues her speech in this manner: O, but vnfortunate and wretched *Clara*, what speakest thou of reuenge? for consider with thy selfe, yea forget not to consider, *Barentano* was but thy friend, *Albemare* is thy husband; the first loued thee in hope to marry thee, but thou art married to the second, and therefore thou must loue him; and although his ingratitude and infidelitie towards thee, make him vnworthy of thy affection, yet ye two are but one flesh, and therefore consider, that malice is a bad aduocate, and reuenge a worse Iudge: But here againe remembring what a foule and odious crime murther was in the sight of the Lord, that the discouery thereof infinitely tended to his glory and honour

honour, and that the poore Foole was doubtlesse inspired from heauen, to affirme that *God* sent the letter: she knowes that her bonds of conscience to her *Saujour*, must exceed and giue a law to those of her dutie towards her husband; and therefore preferring Heauen before Earth, and God before her Husband, shee immediately calles for her Coach, and goes directly to *Baretano's* Vnckle, *Seignior Gionan de Montefiore*, and with sighes and teares shewes him the letter, who formerly, though in vaine, had most curiously and exactly hunted to discouer the murtherers of his Nephew. *Montefiore* first reads the letter with teares, then with ioy; and then turning towards the Lady *Clara*, he commends her zeale and Christian fortitude towards *God*, in shewing her how much the discouery of this murther tended to his glory; and so presently sends away for the *President Criminell*, who immediately repaying thither, hee acquaints him therewith, shewes him the Letter, and prayes him to examin the Lady *Clara* thereon; which with much modesty and equitie he doth, and then returnes with her to her house, and there likewise examineth the Foole where hee had the Letter: who out of his inciuilitie and simplicitie, takes the *President* by the hand, and bringing him to the Cupboard, tells him, *Here God sent the Letter, and here I found him*: when *Valerio* being present, and imagining by his Ladies heauy and sorrowfull countenance, that this Letter had perhaps brought her into some affliction and danger, he looking on the direction of the Letter; as also on the Seale, he reueales both to the *President*, and his Lady, that he receiued that Letter from one whom hee knew not, and that he left it purposely on the Cupboard

board for his Master against his comming. The *President* being fully satisfied herein, admires at *Gods* providence, reuiled in the simplicity of this poore harmlesse foole, in bringing this Letter, which brought the murder of *Baretano* to light (when knowing that *God* doth many times raise vp the foolish and weake to confound the wise & mightie things of the world) he presently grants out a Commission to apprehend *Albemare*, who being then found in bed with *Marina*, one of the most famous Beauties, and reputed Courtezans of *Millan*: Hee both astonished, and amazed, by the iust iudgement of *God*, is drawn from his beastly pleasures and adulteries to prison: where being charged to haue hyred *Pedro* and *Leonardo* to haue murdered *Baretano*, he stoutly denyes it. But *Leonardo's* letter being read him, and he thereon adiudged to the Racke, his Soule and Conscience ringing him many thundring peales of terroure, hee there at large confesseth it: when for this foule and bloody fact of his, hee the same afternoone is condemned to be hanged the next morning, at the common place of Execution, which administred matter of talke, and admiration throughout all *Millan*, when Sericants are likewise sent away to *Pauia*, to bring *Leonardo* to *Mallan*, who not so much as once dreamt or thought that euer this his letter would haue produced him this danger and misery.

And now *Albemare* aduertised of the manner how this Letter of *Leonardo* was brought to light, (without looking vp to Heauen from whence this vengeance iustly befell him for his sinnes) he curseth the crueltie of his wife, the simplicitie of the foole, but most bitterly exclaymeth against the remissenesse and

carelesnesse of his seruant *Valerio*, in not retayning and keeping that letter, which is the only cause of his death: yea, hee is so farre transported with choller against him, as although he haue but a few houres to liue, yet he vowes he wil assuredly cry quittance with him ere he die.

Now the charitie of his Iudges send him Diuines that night in prison, to prepare and cleare his conscience, and to confirme and fortifie his soule against the morne, in his last conflict with the world, and her flight and transmigration to heauen; who powerfully and religiously admonishing him, that if hee haue committed any other notorious offence or crime, he should now doe well to reueale it: He likewise there and then confesseth, how he had caused his man *Valerio* to poyson *Pedro* with wine in prison, the very night before he was executed: whereupon this bloody and execrable wretch (according to his hellish deserts) is likewise apprehended and imprisoned.

And now Gods mercy and iustice brings this vnfortunate (because irreligious) Gentleman *Albemare* to receiue condigne punishment for those his two horrible murders, which he had caused to bee committed on the persons of *Baretano* and *Pedro*, who ascending the ladder in presence of a world of spectators, who flocked from all parts of the Citie to see him take his last farewell of the world: The sight and remembrance of his foule crimes, hauing now made him not onely sorrowfull, but repentant, he briefly deliuered these few words:

He confessed, that he had hired *Pedro* and *Leonardo* to kill *Baretano* in the street, and seduced his seruant *Valerio* to poyson *Pedro* in prison; wherof with much
griefe

griefe and contrition hee heartily repented himselfe, and besought the Lord to forgiue it him: he likewise besought *Leonardo* and *Valerio* to forgiue him, in respect hee knew he was the cause of their deaths; because hee was sure they should not long suruiue him. He likewise forgaue his Foole, as being assured, that it was not he in the Letter, but God in him that had reuealed the Letter for his iust punishment and confusion. And lastly, he with many teares forgaue his wife and Lady *Clara*, whom he affirmed from his heart, was by farre too vertuous for so dissolute and vild an husband as himselfe. He blamed himselfe, for neglecting to loue her; and cursed his Queanes and Courtezans, as being the chief cause of all his miseries, when requesting all that were present to pray for his soule, he was turned off.

But his Iudges seeing that he had added murther to murther, they held it Iustice to adde punishment to his punishment; and so he is no sooner cut downe, but they cause his body to be burnt, and his ashes to bee throwen into the ayre, which is accordingly performed.

Now, because the Lord in his Iustice, will punish as well the Agents as the Authors of murther: whiles *Albemare* is acting the last *Seane* and *Catastrophic* of his *Tragidy*: His wretched hireling *Leonardo* and his execrable seruant *Valerio*, are likewise arraigned, found guilty, and condemned to be hang'd for their seuerall murders of *Baretano* and *Pedro*; and so the very same afternoone, they are brought to their Executioners, where *Leonardo* his former life and profession hauing made him know better how to sinne, then repent; hee out of a souldier-like brauery, (or rather

vanity) thinkes rather to terrifie death, then that death should terrifie him; hee begging pardon for his sinnes in generall of God and the world, and then bidding the hangman doe his office, hee takes his last adiew of the world.

When immediately *Valerio* ascends the ladder, who hauing repentance in his heart, and grieve and sorrow in his lookes; as neere as could be obserued and gathered, spake these words:

That being poore both in friends and meanes, the onely hope of preferment vnder his master, made him at his request to poyson *Pedro* in prison; That many times since he hath heartily grieved for it, and now from his very soule repents himselfe of it, and beseeching the Lord to forgiue it him, That he was as guilty of this murder, as innocent of *Baretano's*; yea, or of the knowledge thereof, before his master was imprisoned for the same, and that as this was his first Capitall crime, so sith he must now die, he reioyced it was his last, and so praying all seruants to beware by his miserable example not to be seduced to commit murder, either by their masters, or the deuill; and beseeching all that were present to pray for his soule, he resigning and commending it into the hands of his Redeemer, was likewise turned off.

And these were the miserable (yet deserued) ends of these bloody murderers; and thus did Gods iustice and renenge, triumphe ouer their crimes, and themselues, by heaping and rayning downe confusion on their heads from heauen, when the deuill (falsly) made them belecue they sate secure; yea, when they least dreamt thereof on earth: Oh that the sight and remembrance of their punishments may restraîne and deterre

deterre vs from conspiring and committing the like crimes ! so shall wee liue fortunate, and die happie; whereas they died miserably , because they liued impiously and prophanely.

And heere fully to conclude and shut vp this History, and therein as I thinke to giue some satisfaction to the cnriosity of the Reader, who may perchance desire to know what became after of the fayre and vertuous *Clara*. Why her sorrowes were so infinite, and their quality and *Nature* so sorrowfull; as being weary of the world, and as it were weighed downe with the incessant vanities, crosses and afflictions thereof : she (notwithstanding the power and perswasions of her parents) assumes her former resolution, to retire and sequest her selfe from conuersing with the world, and so enters into the *Nunnery of the Annuntiation* (so famous in *Millan*)

where for ought I know, or can since
vnderstand to the contrary :

she yet liues a pensiue
and solitarie
sister.



THE
TRIVMPHS OF
GODS REVENGE A-
 gainst the crying and execrable
Sinne of Murther.

History XIII.

La Vasselay poysoneth her Wayting-mayd Gratiana, because shee is ielous that her husband De Mersson is dishonest with her; whereupon bee liues from her: In reuenge whereof, she causeth his man La Villette to murther him in a Wood, and then marries him in requittall. The sayd La Villette a yeare after riding through the same wood, his Horse falles with him, and almost kills him; when he confesseth the murther of his master De Mersson, and accuseth his wife La Vasselay to bee the cause thereof: So for these their bloody crimes, he is hanged, and she burnt aliue.

How falsly, nay how impiously doe we tearme our selues *Christians*, when vnder that glorious and sanctified Title, we seeke to prophane and deface the glory of *Christ*, in cruelly murthering our brethren his members; effects, not of Zeale, but of Rage; not of *Pietie*, but of Madnesse, inuented by the Deuill, and perpetrated by none but
 by

by his Agents, lamentable effects; yea, I say, bloody and infernall crimes, which still ruine those who contriue and confound those who finish them: For let vs but looke from *Earth* to *Heauen*, from *Sathan* to *God*, from *Nature* to *Grace*, and from our Hearts to our Soules, and we shall assuredly find it very difficult for vs to define, whether *Charitie* be a sweeter *Virtue*, or *Malice* a fouler *Vice*, whether that be more secure, or this pernicious, fatall, and dangerous; whether that bee a more apparant testimony of *Gods* sauing *Grace* towards vs, or this of our owne ineuitable perdition, and reprobation. And as it is an odious sinne, and displeasing sacrifice in the sight of *God*, for a stranger to kill another: O then how much more execrable and diabolicall must it be, for a *Gentlewoman* to poyson her Wayting-mayd, and for a seruant to pistoll his master to death, at the instigation of the same *Gentlewoman* his wife: for murthers, no lesse ingrateful and cruell, doth this subsequent *History* report and relate: wherein we shall see, that *God* in the *Triumphs* of his reuenging *Iustice*, and out of his sacred and secret prouidence, hath in all poynts made their punishments as sharpe and seuerer as their crimes were bloody, and deplorable: May wee then reade it to *Gods* glory, and our owne consolation, which we shall assuredly performe, if wee hate the like crimes in others, and detest them in our selues.

IN the faire and pleasant Citie of *Mans*, (being the chiefe and Capitall of the Prouince of *Maine* in *France*, in the very latter yeares that the *Marshall* of *Boys-Daulphin* was Gouvernor thereof, vnder the present King *Lewes XIII.* his master) there dwelt a *Gentlewoman*

slewoman (aged of threescore and three yeares) tearmed *La Vasselay*, being well descended, and left very rich, (as well in lands, as mooueables) by her late deceased husband; *Monsier Freyset*, who was slaine in the behalfe of the *Queene Mother*, in the defence of *Pont de Sey*, assaulted and taken by the *King* her sonne. Now although this olde widdow *La Vasselay* (in respect of her *Age*) was farre more fit to seek *God* in the *Church*, then a new *Husband* in her bed; yet she is weary of a single life, although it be not fully six moneths since shee had buried her second husband; (for the Reader must vnderstand, she had formerly buried her first, at least five and twentie yeares before, and is now againe resolved to take a third) and albeit shee knew that the ciuilitie of the widdows in *France*, was such, that they seldome marry, but almost neuer within the tearme of a whole yeare; yet her conceit and fancie thinks it not onely lawfull, but fit to breake this too austere custome; and therefore she premtorily resolves to liue a wife, and not to dye a widdow. But this resolution of hers, were she either in the *Summer* or the *Autumne* of her yeares, had been as excusable and praise-worthy, as now it fauoured of vndecency and inconstancy, sith shee was in the *Winter* thereof: For *Age*, despight of her *Youth*, and youthfull desires, had throwen snow on her head, and new dyed the colour of her haire from black to white; yea, she was so farre from retayning any signes or reliques of an indifferent beautie, as the furrowes of her face could not iustly shew any ruines or demolitions therof; and yet (forsooth) she will marry againe. Now her Birth and wealth, rather then her *Vertues* and personage, inuite many old widdowers, and some rich *Gentlemen* and

and Counsellors of the famous *Presidiall* Court of that Citie to seeke her in marriage; and indeed, both for lands and money, none her inferiours, but all at least her equals, and some her betters: But in vaine, for the vanitie of her thought, suggest her, that either she is too young for them, or they too old for her; and therefore she will haue none of them: yea, her lust seemes so youthfully to giue a law to her age, and the lye to her yeares, as she casts off her mourning attire, deckes her selfe vp in gay apparell, powders her hayre, paynts her face, with a resolution (forsooth) to haue no old *Dotard*, but a young Gallant to her husband, as if therein she wholly placed, not only her content, but her felicitie: But we many times see such irrigrular desires, and such incontinent designs, met with vnexpected misery, and vnthought of repentance.

Now during the time, that the vaine carriage & deportment of this old *Gentlewoman* & widdow *La Vasselay*, made her selfe the laughture, and by-word of all *Mans*; home comes a young *Gentleman* of this Countrey of *Maine*, tearmed *Monsieur de Merson*, from his trauell in *Italy*, whose Father dwelt betwixt *La Vall*, and *Grauelle*, tearmed *Monsieur de Mansfrelle*, being a Gentleman well descended and rich, and to whom *De Merson* was second sonne, who in a yeares absence in *Italie*, being purposely sent thither by his father to enrich his experience and capacitie (which is the true essence and glory of a traueler, thereby to be the more capable to serue his *Prince* and *Countrey*, as also to be a comfort to his age & a second prop to his house and lynage) hee had made such poore and vnprofitable vse of his trauels, as forgetting the obtayning

Q

ning of the Language and all generous exercises, perfections and quallities (so requisite and gracefull in Gentlemen) he delighted in nothing so much; nay, in nothing else, but to passe his time with *Courtisans* and strumpets, especially in *Venice*, *Rome*, and *Naples*; where for his sakes, and their laciuous pleasures he built vp the greatest part of his Residence; where he so prodigally spent and exceeded his Fathers exhibition; as he returnes into *France*, not loden with *Virtues* and *Experience*, but with *Vices* and *Debts*; being otherwise ignorant in all things which hee should know, and knowing nothing but that wherein he should be ignorant. Onely to the end he might thereby set the better counterfeit tincture on himselfe, and false lustre on his *Endowments* and *Proficiency*, he superficially brought away, or rather borrowed some *Italian* phrases, and complements, which hee thought would not only passe currant with the Gentlemen and Ladies of *France*, but also draw them into admiration, as well of himselfe as them: When immediatly vpon his arriual, that he might the better see and make himselfe seene of the world, he flaunts it out in braue apparrell, both in *L'auall*, *Angiers*, and *Mans*; Yea, there is scarce any great feast or marriage in all those parts: but if he be not enuited, yet he purposely enuities himselfe thereat, thereby to make himselfe the more conspicuous and apparant to the eyes of the world, especiall of the *Ladies* and *Gentlewomen*, in whose acquaintance and fauour, he not onely endeauours to initiate, but striues to ingraft himselfe: But his olde Father *Manfrelle* iudiciously obseruing the vaine behaiour, and light deportment and carriage of this his sonne, he exceedingly grieues thereat,

thereat, because he had well hoped, that his travels would haue returned him, as capable and discreet, as now he finds him ignorant, and which is worse, deboshd; firs he well knew that either of these two vices was enough sufficient and powerfull, not only to ruine his reputation, but his fortunes.

Againe, to adde more sorrowes to his grieve, and more discontent to his sorrowes for the vanitie and leury of this his sonne, euery weeke, nay almost euery day, brings him in new bills of his debts, a third falling in vpon the necke of the first and second, and a fourth on the third: which being greater then his estate, or at least his pleasure would permit him to pay; he takes his sonne *De Merson* aside, & very sharply checkes him for his old and new prodigalities: vowes that he will neither sell or morgage his lands to discharge his foolish debts; and therefore bids him looke to satisfie them, for that hee is resolu'd not to see, much lesse, not to speake with any of his Creditors, how great, or small soeuer the summes be he owes them. This cooling card of *Manfrelles* makes his sonne *De Merson*, not onely bite his lippes for sorrow, but hange his head for anger and vexation, yea, his folly doth so ecclipse and oueruaile his iudgement herein, as in stead of making good vse hereof, he takes a contrary resolution, and so resolues to embrace and follow the worst: for whereas hee should haue made his pride and prodigality strike faile, and now rather seeke to reintegrate himselfe into his Fathers fauour, then any way futurely attempt to incense or exasperate him against him; he onely taking counsell of his *Tomb, Passions, and Choller*, (which as false and treacherous guides most commonly lead vs

to misery and repentance :) againe precipitates and ingulphes himselfe afresh in new debts, both with his *Vsurer, Mercer, and Taylor*: and no longer able to digest his Fathers checks and frownes: he very inconsiderately and rashly packes vp his bagage, leaues his house, rides to *Mans*, & there resolus to passe his time that winter: partly hoping that his Father will discharge his debts in his absence: but more especially to becom acquainted with the beauties of that City, therby to obtain some rich yong heire, or old widow for his wife, whose estate and wealth might support his pride, and maintaine his excessiue prodigalitie & voluptuousnesse: and indeed although the two former of these his hopes deceiue him; yet he shall shortly finde and see, that the third and last will not.

Liuing thus in *Mans*, the brauery of his apparell and equipage, the freeness of his expences, his comely talke, personage, blacke beard, and sanguin complexion makes him assoone acquainted and affected, as knowen of many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and far the more, because they know his father *De Mansfrelle*, to be a very antient and rich Gentleman of that Countrey of *Maine*, and although he is not his heire, yet in regard he is his second sonne, as also a Traueller, he was the more honoured and respected of all those he frequented: so that the very fame and name of *Monsier de Merson* began to be already diuulged and knowen in the Citie; yea, and because he was a great *Balladine*, or *Dancer*, there was no solemn assembly, either publique or priuate, but still *De Merson* made one; and there was not a reputed beauty, or supposed courteous Lady in *Mans*, or thereabouts, but such was his vanity, as he soone wrought and insinuated

sinuated himselfe into her acquaintance and familiaritie, the which he made not onely his delight, but his glory. And although that in a small time, the wiser sort of the *Gentlemen* and *Ladies* of the City found his wit and experience to come infinitely short of his braue apparell; yet the more illiterate and ignorant of them, (who esteeme all men by their lustre, not by their braue worth) as preferring gay apparrell and the comelinesse of the body before the exquisite indowments, and perfections of the mind; they hold him in so high a repute and esteeme, as they thinke him to be the most absolute *Gallant*, not onely of *Mans*, but of all the Countrey of *Maine*; so easie it is to captivate the conceits and iudgements of those who only build their iudgements in their conceits, and not their conceits in iudgement.

And of this ranke and number was our old widow *La Vasselay*, who hauing many times heard of *De Mersons* fame, and comely personage, and seene him once at a sermon, and twice at two seuerall Nuptiall feasts, where his skill and agilitie proued him to be one of the prime dauncers, shee is so farre in loue with him, as in her thoughts and heart, she wisheth she had given halfe her estate and dowrie, conditionally that she were his wife, and he her husband: yea, she is so rauished with the comelinesse of his feature, and the sweetnesse of his complexion and countenance; as all the world is not halfe so deare to her as *De Merson*, nor any man whatsoeuer by many thousand degrees, so dilitious to her eye, & pleasing to her heart & soule as himselfe. And although she be in the frozen *Zone* of her age, yet her intemperate lust maks her desires so youthfully intemperate, as forgetting

reason and modestie, (that the best vertue of our soule, and this the chiefeſt ornament of our body) ſhee a thouſand times wiſheth, that either *De Merſon* were impalled in her armes, or ſhee incloyſtered in his.

But doting (yea I may well neere truly ſay) dying old Gentlewoman, is this a time for thee to think of a young *Husband*, when one of thy old feet is as it were in thy graue? or being in thy *Clymaſtericall* yeare of threeſcore & three, art thou yet ſo fraughted with leuity, & exempt of continency, as thou wilt needs ſeek to marry one of ſiue and twentie? Fooliſh *La Vaſſelay*, if it bee not now time, yea high time for thee to ſacrifice thy deſires to continency, when will it be, if euer be? Didſt thou reſolue to wed a husband neere of thine owne age, and ſo to end the remainder of thy dayes with him, in chaſt and holy wedlocke, that reſolution of thine were as excuſable, as this in deſiring ſo young a one, is worthy, not onely of blame, but of reprehension, and I may ſay of pitie. Conſider, conſider with thy ſelfe, what a prepoſterous attempt and enterpriſe is this of thine, that when thou ſhouldeſt finiſh thy dayes in deuotion and prayer, thou then delighteſt to begin them in concupiſcence, and luſt. O *La Vaſſelay*, mocke at thoſe rebellious and treacherous pleaſures of the fleſh, which ſeeme to mocke at thee, yea, to betray thee: and if there bee yet any ſparke of thy youth, which lies burning vnder the embers of thy age, why if thy chaſte thoughts cannot, yet let modeſty, or at leaſt pietie extinguiſh them. *God* hath already giuen thee two husbands; is it not now therefore time, yea, more then time, for thee to prepare to giue thy ſelfe to *God*. Hitherto the

the chastitie of thy youth hath made thee happy; and wilt thou now permit, that the lust of thine age make thee vnfortunate, or peradventure miserable; and that the puritie and candeur of that be distained and polluted by the foulness and obscenitie of this. *Alas, alas,* incontinent and inconsiderate *Gentlewoman*, of a graue Matron, become not a youthfull Giggler; or if thou wilt not suffer the eyes of thy body, at least permit not those of thy soule to looke from thy painted cheekes, to thy snow-white haire, who can informe and tell thee, that thou art far fitter for Heauen then earth, sith those pleasures are transitory, and these eternall, for *God*, then a husband, sith he onely can make thee blessed, whereas (in reward of thy lasciuious lust) this peradventure may bee reserued to make thee both vnfortunate and wretched.

But the vanitie of this old *Gentlewoman's* thoughts and desires, doe so violently fix and terminate, on the youth and beautie of young, and (as she immodestly tearmes him) faire *De Merson*, as the onely consideration of her delight and pleasure, weighes downe all other respects: so that neither Reason nor Modesty, aduise nor perswasion, can preuaile with her resolution, to diuert her affection from him; but loue him shee dorth, and (which is repugnant as well to the instinct of Nature, as to the influence of modestie, and rules of ciuilitie) seeke him for her husband she will: yea, she is already become so sottish in her affection, and so lasciuiously feruent in her desires towards him, that her heart thinkes of him by day, her soule by night; that admires him as the very life of her felicitie, and thus adores him, as the onely content and glory of her life: shee will not see the greatnesse of
her

her owne estate and wealth, nor consider the smallnesse of his meanes and hopes, in that hee is not an heire, but a lecond brother; she will not enquire after his debts and vices, to know what those may be, what these are; she will not thinke what a preposterous disparitie there is betwixt the fire of his youth, and the ice of her age; nor what a world of discontents and afflictions are incident to proceed thereof: shee will not consider, that in endowing him with all her wealth, that she thereby impouersisheth many, as well of her owne kindred, as of those of her two former husbands, to whom in the right of *Nature* it more iustly and properly belongs: and to conclude and shut vp this poynt, shee will not imagine or dreame, to how many laughters, and scandalls of the world shee exposeth her selfe, who will not onely call her discretion, but her modestie in question, for matching with so young a *Gentleman* as *De Merson*, to whom for age, shee may not onely well bee mother, but, (which is more) grandmother: But contrariwise, this foolish old *Gentlewoman*, hauing sent her witts a wooll-gathering on his sweet and comely personage; his youth and her affection, like two impetuous torrents, and furious inundations, beare downe all other respects and considerations before them: yea, they so submerge her reason, and quite drowne her discretion, as shee hath no eyes vnshut to see the one, nor cares vnstopped to heare the other: so that if shee desire any thing in the world, it is (as formerly is obserued) that shee liue to see *De Merson* her husband, and her selfe his wife: which to effect and accomplish, she knowes no better nor fitter *Agent* to imploy herein, then one *Monsieur de Pruncean*, an ancient *Counsellour*

cellour of the *Presidiall Court* of that Citie, who was the onely *Councellor* both to her last husband, and her selfe, and of whose discretion, integritie and fidelitie, she had all the reasons of the world to rest confident and assured.

Now although the *Wisdome* and *Experience* of *De Pruneau* suggested him what an extreame inequalitye there was betwixt *De Mersons* youth, and *La Vasselays* age, which he could not more pertinently parallell and compare, then to Winter and Summer, the Spring and the Haruest: and therefore how many afflictions and miseries were subiect to attend and wait on such preposterous mariages, whereof he had formerly seene diuers lamentable examples, and wofull instances as well of men as women, who had suffered shipwrack vpon that *Sylla* & this *Charybdis*, he like an honest man, and indeed a truer friend to her, then she was to her selfe, produceth some of the former alledged reasons to her consideration, thereby to diuert the streame of her ill grounded affection from *De Merson*, and (in generall tearmes) to conuey and conduct it to some elder personage, whose yeares (and therefore their dispositions and affections) might the better agree and sympathize. But when he sees that her loue to *De Merson* was so firmly and immoueably settled, as that it not onely appeared to him, to be her griefe, but her torment to be any way crossed or contradicted therein: then he changeth his language, and because she will not hearken to his aduise, he therefore giues way to her resolution, promising her his vtmost power, and best endeauors speedily to effect and compassse her desires; when taking leaue each of other, at last *La Vasselay* remembring she had forgotten some

R

thing,

thing, calles him againe, and prayes him, that if *De Merson* be inquisitiue to know her direct age, that he substract away at least ten yeares thereof: so that whereas she is sixtie three, to affirme that shee is very little aboue fiftie: whereunto she her selfe blushing, *De Pruneau* not able likewise to refraine from smiling, promiseth her to be very mindfull thereof. To which end, he (with the first conueniency finds out *De Merson*, acquaints him how much hee is obliged to *Madamoysele La Vasselay*, for her affection to him, layes before him the Nobilitie of her discent and blood, the greatnesse of her *Estate* and meanes, as also the excellency of her vertues; that fiftie yeares is the most of her age, and that she is not by farre so old, as pleasing and louely; that shee affects him aboue all the men of the world, yea, and desires no man of the world for her husband but himselfe; and that when he pleaseth, she desires the honour of his company to her house, with many other intimations, and insinuations conducing that way.

De Merson hauing formerly vaderstood of *La Vasselay*s rich *Estate* and *Dowry*, as also of the truth of her age; he likes the first well, and although he distast, yet he will dissemble the second: he thanks *De Pruneau* for his paines, and *La Vasselay* for her loue towards him; promiseth to requite the first, and if her wealth and vertues correspond with his relation to deserue the second; alleaging further, that although there be a great inequality in their age, yet sith hee is no heire but a second brother, that it is rather likely then impossible, for it to be a match betwixt them; and in the meane time, to requite part of her affection, he promiseth to Sup with her the night following at her house,

houſe, where he onely deſires his company and aſſiſtance, that they may the more effectually and ſecretly conſult of this buſineſſe, which he hopes will ſo much import-as well her good and his content, as her content and his good: and ſo for that time they part.

De Prumeau hauing receiued this pleaſing and diſcreet anſwere from *De Merſon*, he returnes with the relation, and repetition thereof to *La Vaſſelay*, vowes that his exterior feature is no way anſwerable, but comes farre ſhort of his interior Vertues and diſcretion; and that by all which, hee cyther can collect from his ſpeeches, or gather from his deportment and behauiour, he is in his conceit the moſt accompliſhed Gentleman, not onely of *Maine*, but of *France*, and ſo bids her prepare her Supper, and her ſelfe to entertaine him the next night. Which anſwere of *De Merſons*, and relation of *De Prumeau*, is ſo pleaſing to her heart and thoughts, as her age ſeemes to bee already raviſhed with ioy at the conceyt of his Youth: when thinking euery minute a moneth, and euery houre a yeare, before ſhee be made happy, and her houſe bleſſed with his preſence, ſhee leaues no coſt vnſpared, or vnſpent, to make his Entertainment anſwerable to his welcome: whereof whiles ſhee is not onely carefull, but curious in prouiding, let vs cursorily ſpeake a word or two how *De Merſon* entertaines and digeſteth this vnexpected motion and affection of *La Vaſſelay*.

He laughs in his ſleeue to ſee her youthfull affections ſo flouriſhing in this *Autumne*, nay, in this *Winter* of her age, as to deſire and ſecke ſo young a Gentleman as himſelfe for her husband, but he vnderſtands ſhe is

exceeding rich, and therefore resolues that this vertue is capable to oueralue and rancome that defect and error of hers. He sees that his father will not pay his debts, and that he of himselfe cannot; that they growing more clamorous, will shortly become scandalous: which will not onely directly preuent, but infallibly ruine his fortunes. He considereth how displeasing her age will be to his youth, as also that there is no hell comparable to that of a discontented bed, and then againe, his deboshed and lustfull thoughts, suggest him this remediy: That *Mans* hath beautie enough for him to recreate himselfe, and to passe his time with; and that although she haue him sometimes in her bed, yet he may haue younger lasses and Ladies in his armes, both when, and where he pleaseth: He considereth that rich widdowes are not so soone found, as sought, nor so soone obtained as found; and that if he refuse *La Vasselay* this day, he may not onely repent it to morrow, but perchance all the dayes of his life; and although his will may, his power shall not be able to repaire or redresse this error of his, all his life after: He is not ignorant that *Gentlewomen* of her age and wealth, are subiect to be as soone lost as won in a humor: and therefore then lost, because not then won. Againe that the elder she is, the sooner she will die, and he then is at liberty to marry as young a *Virgin* as he pleaseth, and that her wealth would then proue a true proppe, and sweet comfort to his age. And to conclude and finish this consultation of his, she is without children to molest and trouble him, and therefore to be desired, she is vertuous, discreet, and of an excellent fame and reputation, and therefore deserues to bee accepted and not refused.

Vpon

Vpon the grounds of which reasons and considerations, he makes good his promise to *De Pruneau*, and comes the next night both to visite, & suppe with *La Vasselay*; who hauing purposely deckt her selfe vp in her youthfull and gayest apparell; receiues him, withall demonstrations of affection and ioy. At his first arriuall he affords her two or three kisses, whereat she infinitely both reioyceth and triumpheth: and in a word, he finds that his weleome not onely exceeds his deserts, but his expectation; and belecue me it was woorth the obseruation, to see how superficially his youth looked on her age, and how artificially and lustfully her age gazed on his youth. Now, by this time supper is serued in, wherein her affection was againe discovered him in the curiosity and bounty thereof. Where *De Pruneau* to giue life to their mirth, tells them both, that he hopes this their first meeting and enteruiew will produce effects answerable to both their contents and desires; Whereat *De Mersen* cannot refraine from blushing, nor *La Vasselay* from smiling: They are all very pleasant and iocund at table, and she to giue the better edge and relish to his affection, striues to seeme farre younger then indeed she is, and then he knowes her to be; yea, she doth so cunningly entermixe and dispierce youthfull speeches amidst her aged grauity, as if she were not old, or at least, newly made young. Now whiles she feasted her eyes on his fresh countenance and faire complexion, he sends his abroad to looke on her plate, rich hangings, and household-stuffe, wherewith he saw her houle was richly and plentifully furnished: Supper ended, and the cloth taken away, they are no sooner fallen from their Viands, but they fall

to their talke. *De Merson* kindly and familiarly taking his new old *Mistris* in his *Armes*, as if he had already giuen her a place in his heart and affections ; which makes her beyond her selfe , both merry and ioyfull. I will not trouble the Reader with the repetition of what speeches and complements here past betwixt them ; because in this, and my future Histories I will follow the same Methode of breuity which I haue proposed and obserued in my former. Let then his inquisitiue curiositie vnderstand, that they parted very louingly and affectionately this first time : and *De Merson* although he were a deboshed *Gentleman*, yet he is not so simple to omit, but rather so well aduised to prie into the true depth, & naked truth of her estate, and the rather , for that he hath knowen many *Gentlemen* who haue been fetch'd ouer, and gull'd in this nature, and in marrying one widow haue match't themselues to two theeuers , and credulously thinking her rich, haue in the end found her a very begger : Whereupon he takes three dayes respite to resolue, and so with some kisses and many thanks for her affection, and her kind entertainment and great cheere, he for that night takes his leaue of her , whose fayre carriage and discret resolution in temporizing , *La Vasseluy* applauds , and *De Pruneau* approues : So *De Merson* hauing spent the first and second day in surueying the writings of her Dowry , the Leases of her lands and houses, and the Bonds and Bills of debts due to her, withall her ready Money , Plate, and other moueables : he finds her estate to answere his expectation and her report, and that she is really worth in land, six thousand Francks yerely, and her moueables worth at least eightene thousand more, he the third day

day publickly contracts himselfe to her; and having aduertised his father thereof, who likes the wealth better then the widdow, within eight dayes after privately marries her, which administreth cause of speech and wonder in and about *Mans*: some blaming her of indiscretion and leuity, to match so young a *Gentleman*, others taxing him of folly to marry so old a widdow; some extolling and applauding his iudgement, in enriching himselfe with so great an Estate: which would not onely deface his debts, secure his youth and age from the stormes of want, and the tempests of necessity, but also in the one and the other maintaine him richly, prosperously, and gallantly. And others againe beleeuing and presaging, that this their great inequality and disparity of yeares, would either of the one side or other, or both, produce many discontents, & afflictions, instead of hoped-for ioyes and prosperities. Thus euery one speakes differently of this preposterous match, according as their passions and fancies dictate them: but which of all these opinions and iudgements speakes truest, we shall not goe farre to vnderstand and know.

We haue seene the consummation of this marriage, *Youth* wedded to *Age*; *May* to *December*, and young *De Merson* to old *La Vasselay*; in which contract & nuptials, either of them are so vaine, and both so irreligious, as caring wholly for the pleasures of their bodies, they haue not therein so much as once thought of their soules, or of heauen: Yea, *God* is not so much as once nominated or remembred of them. All the ends of marriages are onely two; *Gods glory*, and the propagation of children; and because they cannot hope for the second, must they therefore needs
be

be so impious, as to forget the first. *Aye me*, if his youth had attained no more Grace, could her age retain no more goodnesse; or how can they flatter themselves with any hope, that this marriage of theirs can possible prosper, when onely her ayme and end therein is lust, and his wealth. If a building can subsist and flourish, which hath a rotten and reeling foundation, then this match of theirs may prosper, otherwise cannot: for what more rotte thē the beastly pleasures of her lustfull, and yet decayed age, & what more reeling and fickle, then the constant inconstancy of his laciuous youth, which make my thoughts iustly feare, and my heart truely presage and apprehend: that repentance, not pleasure; affliction, not ioy; misery, not prosperity, is at the heeles to attend and follow these their Nuptials: As marke we the sequell and it will briefly informe vs how.

De Merson hath not beene married two whole moneths to *La Vasselay*, but hee begins to repent himselfe that euer hee matched her, for he now sees, though before he would not, that it is impossible for youth to sedge and sympathise with her age, he sees that she hath a decrepit, sickly and decayed body, and that she is neuer free of the Cough and Rheume, as also of an Issue in her left arme, which is not only displeasing, but loathsome to him. Yea, when shee hath taken off her ruffe and head attire, and dighted her selfe in her night habilements, then he vowes he is afraid of her Lambe-skin furred cap and wast-coate; and takes her withered face for a *Vizard*, or a *Commet*, which yelds no delight but terror to his eyes: swearing that he serves onely for a bed-pan to heat her frozen body, which of it selfe is farre colder then

a *Marble Statue*: Yea, he is ſo farre out of loue with her, becauſe, to write the truth, he neuer truely loued her, that her ſight is a plague to him, her preſence by day a Purgatory, and her company by night a very Hell.

But deboshed and diſſolute *Gentleman*, theſe vitious and impious conceits of thine, come immediatly from Hell and *Sathan*, and are no way infuſed in thy thoughts by *Heauen*, much leſſe inſpired in thy heart by *God*: Conſider, conſider with thy ſelfe, that if *La Vaſſelay* be old, yet ſhe is now thy wife, and that whatſoeuer *De Praneau* or her ſelfe informed thee of fiftie yeares: Yet thou knoweſt ſhe could not be leſſe then ſixtie three, and more ſhe is not. In which regard marriage (the holy Inſtitution of *Heauen*) hauing now made you of two, one, if thou wilt not loue her age, at leaſt thou ſhouldeſt reuerence in, or if thou canſt not affect her, thou ſhouldeſt not hate her. Hath ſhe imperfections, what woman in the world liues without them? or is ſhe peſtered with diſeaſes, who can be either exempted from them, or preuent them? Thou haſt vowed in the Temple of the Lord, and in the preſence of him and his people, not onely to loue, but to honour her: and is thy inſtancy and impiety already ſuch, as forgetting that promiſe and vowe of thine, thou doſt now not onely diſhonour, but deſpiſe and contemne her; and that thou onely maदेſt that vow purpoſely to breake it: O *De Mersſon*, if thou art not capable of Counſel, yet do but beleue the truth, and thou wilt find, that if thou wilt not loue her, becauſe ſhe is too old to be thy wife, yet thou ſhouldeſt reſpect and regard her, becauſe ſhe is old enough to be thy Grandmother: for as it is inciuility not to re-

uerence *Age*; so it is impietie to disdaine and maligne it: and if in any man towards a meere stranger, how much more a husband to his owne wife? And because it is easier to espy our wiues imperfections, then to finde out, or reforme our owne; if thy wife *La Vasselay* bee guiltie of any fault towards thee, it is because shee loues thee too well, and affects thee too dearly.

We haue seene *De Mersons* distaste of his wife, *La Vasselay*: Let vs now see how shee likes, or rather why she so soone dislikes him: for he beares himselfe so strangely, and withall, so vnkindly towards her, as her desires of his youth comes farre short both of her expectation and hopes: for if hee lye with her one night, he wanteth fixe from her, is still abroad, and seldome or neuer at home with her; yea, hee is of such a gadding humour, and ranging disposition, as his thoughts and delights are transported elsewhere, not at home; with other young Dames of *Mans*, not with her selfe: and the vanitie of his pleasures doe so farre surprize and captiuate him, that he is already become so vitious, as he makes day his night, and night his day, liuing rather like a voluptuous *Epicure*, then a temperate or *Ciuill Christian*: Neither, quoth shee, is it lealoufie, but truth which makes her prie so narrowly into his lewd and lasciuious actions, wherein the further shee wades, the more cause shee finds both of grieve and vexation, which makes her wish, that shee had beene blind when shee first saw him; and eyther he or her selfe in *Heauen*, when they so vnfortunately marryed each other here vpon *Earth*.

How now fond and foolish olde *Gentlewoman*, are thy

thy ioyes so soone conuerted into sorrowes, and thy triumphes into teares? why, thou hast iust cause to thanke none but thy selfe, for these thy crosses and afflictions, sith thy lustfull and lasciuious desires were not onely the author, but the procurer of them: for hadst thou been more modest, and lesse wanton, thou mightest haue apparantly scene, and prouidently fore-scene, that *De Mersens* youth was too young for thy age, because thy age was too old for his youth; so that hadst thou beene then but halfe so stayed and wise, as now thou art sorrowfull: thou needest not now grieue for that which thou canst not redresse, nor repent for that which is out of thy power to remedy. But rash & inconsiderate woman, how comes this to passe, that thou art ready to entertaine Ielousie, when death stands ready to entertaine thee? Could all the course of thy former youth be so happy, not to be acquainted with this vice, and doth now thy frozen age thinke it a vertue to admit and embrace it? Ay mee, I grieue to see thy folly, and lament to vnderstand thy madnesse in this kind: for what is Ielousie, but the rage of our thoughts, and braines, the disturber of our peace and tranquillitie, the enemy of our peace and happinesse, the traytour of our iudgement and vnderstanding, the plague of our life, the poyson of our hearts, and the very bane and Canker of our soules? Ielousie, why, it is the daughter of frenzie, and the mother of madnesse; it is a vice purposely sent from hell, to make those wretched on earth, who may liue fortunate and happy, and yet will not; yea, it is a vice which I know not whether it be more easie to admit, or difficult to expell, being admitted. But *La Vasselay*, expell it thou

must, at least, if thou thinke to liue fortunate, and not to die miserable. Wert thou as young as aged, thy Ielousie might haue some colour and excuse in meeting with the censures of the world; whereas now not deserting the one, it cannot receiue the other. And as those women are both wise and happy, who winke at the youthfull escapes of their husbands: so thy Ielousie makes thee both meritorious, and guiltie of thy afflictions, because thou wilt bee so foolish to espy, and so malicious to remember these of thine. Is *De Merson* giuen and addicted to other women? why pardon him, because he is a young man: and as he is thy husband, and thou his wife, beleeue that he is euery way more worthy of thy prayers, then of thine enuie.

Thus we see vpon what fatall and ominous termes these late married couple now stand; *De Mersons* youth scorning and spurning at his wife *La Vasselays* age, and wholly addicting himselfe to others; and her age growen infinitely ielalous of his youth: so that for any thing I see or know to the contrary, these different vices haue already taken such deepe and dangerous root in them, as they threaten not only the shipwracke of their content, but of their fortunes, if not of their liues.

Now for vs to find out the particular obiekt of *La Vasselays* ielousie, as her foolish curiositie hath already the generall cause: we must know, that she hath a very proper young *Gentlewoman* who attends her, of some eighteen yeares of age, tearmed *Gratiana*, of a middle stature, somewhat enclining to fatnesse, hauing a fresh sanguine complexion, and bright flaxen haire, she being indeed euery way exceeding louely and

and faire; and with this *Gratiana*, she feares her *Husband* is more familiar then either modesty or chastity can permit; and yet shee hath onely two poore reasons for this, her credulity & ielousie, and *God* knowes they are poore and weake ones indeed: The first is, that shee thinks her owne withered face serues onely but as a foyle, to make *Gratiana's* fresh beautie seeme the more precious and amiable in his eyes. The second is, that she once saw him kisse her in her presence in the garden, when she brought him a handkercher, which his Page had forgotten to giue him. Ridiculous grounds, and triuiall reasons, for her to build her feare; or erect her ielousie on, or to inuent and rayse so foule a scandall and callumny: and yet not to suppress, but to report the whole truth, *De Mersen* was lasciuiously in loue with *Gratiana*, had often attempted her deflouration, but could neuer obtain her consent thereunto: for she was as chaste as faire, and impregnable, either to bee seduced by his gifts and presents, or to be vanquished and wonne by his treacherous promises, protestations, and oathes: for she told him plainly and peremptorily, when she saw him begin to grow importunate, and impudent in this his folly, That although shee were but a poore *Gentlemans* daughter, yet shee thanked *God*, that her parents had so vertuously train'd her vp in the Schoole of *Honour*, that she would rather dye, then liue to be a strumpet to any Gentleman or Prince of the world: which chaste answer, and generous resolution of hers, did then so quench the flames of his lasciuious and inordinate affection to her, as thencefoorth hee exchanged his lust into loue towards her, and vowed, that he would both respect & honour her as his sister.

Now although they both kept the passage of this businessse secret from his wife her Mistris, yet notwithstanding, as it is the nature of Ielousie, not to hearken to any reason, nor approue of any beliefe but of her owne: therefore shee is confident, that he lyes with *Gratiana* more oftner then with her selfe; which she vowes she cannot digest, and will no longer tolerate. To which end, (with a most malicious, and strange kind of treachery) she makes faire weather with *Gratiana*; and (thinking to coole her hote courage, and to allay the heat of her luxurious blood) looking one day stedfastly in her face, she tells her that shee hath need to be let blood, to preuent a Feuer: whereunto, although chaste and innocent *Gratiana* was neuer formerly let blood, she notwithstanding willingly consents thereunto; which to effect, *La Vasselay* (like a base mistris, and a treacherous stepdame) sends for an *Apothecary*, named *Rennet*, gives him a watch-word in his eare, to draw at least sixteene ounces of blood from *Gratiana*, for that she was strongly entred into a burning Feuer: But he being as honest, as shee was treacherous and cruell, told her, that the drawing of so great a quantitie of blood from her, might not onely impair her health, but indanger her life. But she replies, it was so ordered by a *Doctor*: whereupon he opens her right arme veyne; and as he had neere drawen so much from this poore harmeleffe young *Gentlewoman*, shee faints twice in a chayre betwixt their armes, and all the cold water they threw in her face, could very hardly refetch her, and keepe life in her: this old hard-hearted hagge, still notwithstanding crying out, that it was not blood enough; hauing no other reason for this her treachery and crueltie,

tie, but that indeed she thought it not enough, or sufficient to quench the vnquenchable thirst and flame of her ielousie : of which this is the first effect towards this innocent young Gentlewoman, but we shall not goe farre to see a second.

Gratiana is so farre from dreaming of her mistris ielousie towards her master, and her selfe; or from once thinking of this her trecherous letting her blood, as she thanks her, for her affection and care of her health : and now the very next day after *De Merfion* dyning at home with his old wife, (which he had not done in many dayes before) and seeing *Gratiana* looke so white and pale, demaunds her if she bee not well, and then questioneth his wife what ayles her Gentlewoman to looke so ill, which she seemes to put off with a feigned excuse : but withall (as if this care of her husband towards *Gratiana*, were a true conformation of their dishonesty, and her ielousie) she retaynes the memory thereof deeply in her heart and thoughts : yea, it is so frequent, and fixed in her imaginations, as she cannot, she will not any longer suffer or indure this affection of her husband to *Gratiana*; nor that *Gratiana's* youth shal wrong *La Vafelay's* age in the rites and duties of marriage. Wherefore casting sad aspects on him, and malignant looks on her, she to please, and giue satisfaction to her ielousie (which cannot be pleased or satisfied with any thing but reuenge) resolues to make her know what it is, for a wayting maid to offend and wrong her mistris in this kind : when not to deminish, but rather to augment and redouble her former cruelty towards her. Her husband riding one day abroad in company of diuers other *Gentlemen* of the Citie, to hunt Wolues which
abound

abound in those vast and spacious woods of *Mayne*: she vnder pretence of some other businesse, calls *Gratiana* alone into her inner chamber, when bolting the doore after her, she with meager and pale enuy in her lookes, and implackable fury and choller in her speeches, chargeth her of dishonesty with her husband, calling her whore, strumpet, and baggage: affirming that the time and houre is now come for her to be reuenged of her. Poore *Gratiana* both amazed and affrighted at this sudden & furious (both vnexpected & vndeified allarum of her *Mistress*, seeing her honor, & (as she thinks & fears) her life called in question; she after a world of sighs and teares, tearmes her accusers deuils and witches, vowes by her part of heauen, and vpon the perill of her owne soule, that she is innocent of that crime whereof she accused her, and that neither in deed or thought, she was euer dishonest, or vnchast with any man of the world, much lesse with her Master: But this will not satisfie incensed *La Vasselay*, neither are these speeches or teares of *Gratiana* of power to passe current with her ielousie; but reputing them false and counterfeit, she calles in her chamber mayd, and Cooke-mayd, whom she had purposely led there, and bids them vnstrippe *Gratiana* naked to her wast, and to bind her hand and foot to the bedde post; which with much repyning and pitie, they are at last inforced to doe. When commaunding them forth the chamber, and bolting the doore after them, she not like a woman, but rather as a fury of hell, flies to poore innocent *Gratiana*, and with a great burchen rod, doth not only raze but crucifie her armes, backe and shoulders: when harmelesse soule, she (though in wayne) hauing no other defensiu weapons but her
tongue,

tongue, and her innocency, cries aloud to heauen and earth for succour. But this old hagge as full of malice as Ielousie, hath no compassion of her cries, nor pittie of her sighes : yea, neither the sight of her teares, or blood, (which trickling downe her cheekes and shoulders, doe both bedew, and ingrayne her smocke) are of power to appease her fury and enuy, vntill hauing spent three rods, and tyred and wearied both her armes, she in the heat of her choller, and the height of her reuenge ; deliuers her these bitter and scoffing words. *Mynion, this, this is the way, yea the onely way to coole the heate of thy courage, and to quench the fire of thy lust ;* When calling in hertwo mayds, she commaunds them to vnbind *Gratiana*, and to helpe on her clothes. When triumphing in her cruelty, she furiously departs and leaues them ; who cannot refrayne from teares, to see how seuerely and cruelly their *Mistress* hath handled this her poore *Gentlewoman*.

Gratiana the better to remedy these her insupportable and cruell wrongs, holds it discretion to desemble them, and so prouiding her selfe secretly of a horse and man, she the next night steales away ; rides to *La Ferte*, and from thence to her father at *Nogent le Retrou*, where he was superintendant of the *Prince of Condes* house and Castle in that Town, & where the *Princesse Dowager* his mother built vp the greatest part of her sorrowfull residence, whiles he was detayned prisoner in the Castle of *Boys de Vincennes* neere *Paris* : *La Vasselay* grieues at this her sudden, and v unexpected departure, the which she feares her husband *De Merson*, and her Father *Monsieur De Brema*y will take in ill part ; wherein she is no way deceiued, for the one grieues, and the other stormes thereat : yea,

T

when

when *De Morsen* (through flattery and threats) had drawen from the Chamber-mayd and Cooke-maid, the truth of his wiues cruell whipping of *Gratiana*, as also the cause thereof, her ielousie: He iustly incensed and enraged, flies to this his sottish and cruell wife, tells her, that ielousie comes from the diuell, whose part he affirms she hath acted, in acting this her cruelty vpon innocent *Gratiana*, then whom there liues not a chaster maid in the world, That although she were poore, yet, that she was aswell descended as her selfe. In which regard, if she did not speedily right and redeeme her wrongs, and seeke meanes to pacifie and recall her, that he would forthwith leaue her, yea, and vtterly forsake her. Which cooling card of his to his wife, makes her looke on her former erronius cruelty towards *Gratiana*, rather with outward griefe, then inward repentance. But seeing that her ielousie must now stoope and strike sayle, to her husbands *Choller*, and that to enioy his company, she must not be exempted and deprived of hers: she contrary to her desires and will, (which still retains the fumes and flames of ielousie, as that doth of reuenge) is inforced to make a vertue of necessity, and so to beare vp with the time, feigning her selfe repentant and sorrowfull for what shee had formerly done to *Gratiana*: shee to reclayme her, buyes her so much wrought blacke Taffety for a Gowne, and so much Crimson Damaske for a Petticote, and with a bracelet of pearle which she accustomed to weare vpon her right arme; she sends it to *Nogens* to her by *La Vilette*, a Gentleman of her husbands, and accompanieth it with a letter to her father, *Monsieur de Bremay*, which contained these words.

Having

Having vindicated Truth from Error, and metamorphosed Ielousie into Iudgement, I find that I haue wronged thy daughter Gratiana, whereas I grieue, with contrition, and sorrow with repentance, sith my husbands vowes and oasbes haue fully cleared her Honour and Chastity, which my foolish incredulity and feare, rashly attempted, both to ecclips and disparage: In which regard, praying her to forgine, and thy selfe to forget that wrong; I earnestly desire her speedie returne by this bearer, and yee both shall see, that I neuer formerly bated her so much, as hencefoorth I will both loue and honour her: I haue now sent her some small tokens of my affection; and ere long she shall find greater effects and testimonies thereof; for knowing her to be as chaste as sayre; In this De Bremay I request thee to rest confident, that as she is now thy daughter by Nature, so she shall be hencefoorth mine by adoption.

LA VASSELAY.

De Bremay having receiued this letter, and his daughter Gratiana these kind tokens from her Mistris La Vasselay: his choller, and her grieve and sorrow is soone defaced and blowen away: so he well satisfied, and she contented and pleased, he sends her back from Nogent to Mans by La Villette, by whom hee writes this ensuing letter to his Mistris La Vasselay in answer of hers.

THy Letter hath giuen me so much content and satisfaction, as thy undeserned cruelty to my daughter Gratiana did grieve, and indignation. And had she beene guilty of that crime, wherof thy feare made thee iealous, I would for euer haue renounced her for my daughter, and

deprived her of my sight : for as her Vertues are her best wealth, and her Honour her chiefest reuener : so if shee had fayled in these, or faltered in this, I should then haue ioyned with thee to hate her, as I doe now : o loue her : But her Teares and Oathes haue cleered her innocency, and in hers, thy husbands. In which regard, relying vpon her owne merits, and thy professed kindnesse ; she forgetting, and I forgiving things past, I now returne her thee by thy seruant La Villette ; hoping that if thou wilt not affect her as thy adopted Daughter, yet that thou wilt tender her as thy obedient and obseruant handmaid.

DE BREMAY.

Gratiana's hopes, and her fathers credulity of *La Vasselays* future affection towards her, as also her gifts and promises, so far preuaile with them, as she is now returned to her, from *Nogen* to *Mans* ; But I feare she had done farre better to haue still remained with her father ; for she might consider, and he know, what little safety, and apparant danger, there is to relie vpon the fauour of an incensed ielousie : *La Vasselay* (in all outward shew) receiues and welcomes *Gratiana* with many expressions of loue, and demonstrations of ioy, thereby to please her husband ; who indeed likes so well of her returne, as he likes his wife the better for procuring it. And now to the eye of the world, and according to humane conceit and sense, all three parties are reconciled and satisfied, as if *La Vasselays* ielousie had neuer heretofore offended her husband, nor her cruelty wronged *Gratiana* : or as if he had neuer knowne the one, nor she felt the other. But we shall not goe farre to see this calme overtaken with a tempest, and this Sunne shine surprised

prised with a diſmall and diſaſterous ſhowre.

For three moneths were not fully expired; ſince *Gratiana's* returne to *Mans*, but *La Vaſſelay's* old iealouſie of her, and her husband *De Mersſon*, which ſeemed to bee ſuppreſſed and extinguished, doth now flaſh and flame forth anew with more violence and impetuofitie; yea, hee cannot looke on *Gratiana*, much leſſe ſpeake to her, but preſently this old iealous Beldame in her heart and thoughts, proclaimes them guiltie of Adultery: whereat ſhee indiſcreetly ſuffers her ſelfe to be ſo farre tranſported with *Indignation* and *Enny*, as ſhe vowes ſhe will no longer tolerate or digeſt it. And now it is, that like a fury of hell ſhe firſt aſſumes damnable and execrable reſolutions, not onely againſt the Innocency, but againſt the life of innocent and harmleſſe *Gratiana*; who poore ſoule is the nearer her danger, in reſpect ſhe holds her ſelfe fartheſt from it: yea, this iealous old Hagg, this Fury, nay, this ſhe-Deuill *La Vaſſelay*, hath not only conſulted, but determined and concluded with her bloody thoughts, that ſhe will ſpeedily ſend *Gratiana* into another world; becauſe her youth ſhall no longer abuſe and wrong her age in this. When forgetting her ſelfe, her ſoule, and her God, thereby purpoſely to pleaſe her ſenſes, her Ielouſie, and her Tutor the Deuill, ſhe vowes, that no reſpect of reaſon or Religion, no conſideration of Heauen or Hell, ſhall be capable to diuert her from diſpatching her: yea, and as if ſhe not onely reioyced, but gloried in this her pernitiouſ and bloody deſigne, ſhe thinks euery houre a yeare before ſhee hath perform'd it: To which end, providing her ſelfe of ſtrong poyſon, and watching, and catching at the very firſt opportunitie, as ſoone as e-

uer *Gratiana* found her selfe not well, she vnder a colour of much affection and care to her, makes her some White broath, wherein infusing and intermixing the aforesaid poyson, she (gracelessly and cruelly) giues it her, the which within sixe dayes fainting and languishing, makes a perpetuall diuorce and separation betwixt her soule and her body, leauing this to descend to earth, and that to ascend to heauen, to draw downe vengeance on this hellish and execrable *La Vasselay*, for so inhumanly and cruelly murdering this her harmelesse and innocent wayting Gentlewoman *Gratiana*.

De Merfon vnderstanding of *Gratiana's* death, almost as soone as of her sicknesse, he very sorrowfully bites the lip therat: for considering this accident in its true nature, his thoughts suggest him, & his heart and soule prompts him, that his wife *La Vasselay* had vndoubtedly occasioned her death, & so metamorphosed her ielousie into murder; yea, & notwithstanding the faire and sorrowfull shew which she puts thereon to the contrary, yet the premises considered, he is very confident in this his beliefe and feare: when grieuing at the crueltie of this disaster, and abhorring the authour of so monstrous and bloody a fact; the very sight of this his old wretched wife is odious, and the remembrance of this her cruell crime, detestable and execrable vnto him. Againe, when he considereth *Gratiana's* beautie and chastitie, and that she was sent to her vntimely graue for his sake, this doth not onely redouble his sorrowes, but infinitely augment and increase his afflictions: so that beginning to feare his wiues enuy, as much as he hated her ielousie, in that it was not onely possible, but likely, that it might also
 futurely

futurely extend, and reflect on him, as well as it already had on harmelesse and innocent *Gratiana*, hee assumes a resolution to leaue and forsake her, the which wee shall shortly see him put in execution; when the better to curbe and vex her, he secretly packes vp all her Bills, Bonds, Leases, and Conueyances, as also all her Money, Plate, Jewels, and richest Householdstuffs; and so giuing out a prohibition to all the Tennants, not to dare to pay her any rent, he allowing her only a bare maintenance, very suddenly (when shee least expected or dreamt thereof) takes horse, and rides home to his fathers, where hee resolues to make the greatest part of his residence; and all the teares and prayers of his wife, are not of power to reclaime or retaine him.

La Vasselay seeing the vnkindnesse of her Husband *De Merson*, in making her a widdow, almost as soone as a wife; as also his ingratitude, in depriuing her of the vse and fruition of her owne estate & meanes, and leaning her so poore an allowance, as could scarce warrant her a competent maintenance, shee is almost ready to die for meere griefe and sorrow thereof, but how to remedy it, she knowes not: And now she repents her folly and indiscretion, in matching her aged selfe to so young a man as *De Merson*: now she doth not onely accuse, but condemne her owne iea-lousie, which drew her to this foule fact of murthering her harmelesse, and as she now beleeueth, her innocent Wayting-maid *Gratiana*; for the which, this ingratefull departure, and hard vsage of her husband, is but the least, and as she tearmes it, but the fore-runner of greater punishments, which *God* hath ordained and reserued for her: yea, it is not onely a griefe to
her

her thoughts, but a vexation to her heart and soule, to see her selfe made the mocking stocke and laughter of all *Mans*, and *Maine*, who rather excuse her husbands youth, then any way pitie or commiserate her age; and to see that the friends of her prosperitie turne their backs and faces to her, in her affliction and pouertie: and if shee haue any hope yet left, to assist and comfort her in these her calamities, it is by endeavoring to reconcile and reclaime her husband to her by Letters: when taking pen and paper, shee within a moneth of his departure, sends him these few lines:

Since at thy request I both recanted my Ielousie to thy selfe, and repented my crueltie to my mayd Gratiana, what haue I committed or done, that should deserue this thy ingratefull, and as I may truely say, Heart killing departure? for hauing made a most exact Scruteny in my thoughts and soule; either of them informe me, and both assure mee, that the freenesse and seruency of my affection towards thee, deserued not so cruell, but a farre more courteous requitall. If my Age bee any way displeasing to thy youth, yet deprive me not of the felicitie of thy sight and presence, wherein I not onely delight, but glory. And although I can bee content that thou surfet with my wealth, yet make mee not so miserable, as to starue both in and for thy presence. If any haue giuen thee any sinister or false impressions, either of my selfe or actions; why if thy affection to mee will not deface them, at least let thy pitie: Tea, returne my sweet and deare Husband, and what errors or faults soeuer thou sayest I haue committed, I will not onely redceme them with kisses, but with teares.

LA VASSELAY.

De

De Merson hauing receiued this his wiues Letter, it works such poore effects in his affection, as he doth rather reioyce then commiserate her estate and sorrowes; yea, he so slights her and her remembrance, as once hee had thought to haue answered her letter with silence; but at last he (some eight dayes after) returns her this answer:

WHat hope can I haue of thy Affection, when I see thou art inuolably constant to thy Ielousie; and if the Scruteny of thy thoughts and soule bee as true as thou pretendest, yet I feare that this Ielousie of thine, is not the greatest, but the least of thy crimes. Thou writest me, that I giue a cruell requitall to thy affection, but pray God, thou haue not giuen a more sharpe and inhumane one to *Grariana's* seruice and Chastitie: Neither is it thy Age, but thy Imperfections and Vices, which are both displeasing and odious to my youth: for I could brook that with as much patience, as I can digest these with impossibilities. If thou want meanes, I will grant thee more; but for my presence, I haue many reasons to deny thee. I know none but thy selfe, which hath giuen me any impressions of thy actions; and if those were false, they would proue thy true happines, as now they doe thy misery, which my affection doth pitie, though cannot redresse. It is but in vaine for thee, either to expect or hope for my returne; and sith thy faults and errors are best knowne to thy selfe, let thy repentance redeeme them towards God: for neither thy kisses nor teares, can or shall so me.

DE MERSON.

This Letter of *De Merson* to his wife *La Vasselay*, is so farre from comforting, as it doth most extreemely afflict

afflict her : And although his discontents be such, as she sees it almost impossible to reconcile and reclaime him : yet being exceedingly perplexed, and grieved with this her solitary and discontented life, shee yet hopes that a second Letter may obtaine that of him, which her first could not : when sixe moneths time being now slipt away since his departure, shee faigning her selfe sicke, writes vnto him againe to this effect :

THy absence hath so deprived my ioyes, and engendred my sorrowes, that Sicknesse threatens my life to bee neere her period : So among a world of discontents, let mee yet beare this one Content to my graue, that I may once more see thee, whom so tenderly I both desire, and long to see : and if I cannot bee so happie as to liue, at the least make mee so fortunate, as to dye in thine Armes : which I knowe not whether it be a greater Charitie for thee to graunt, or a Crueltie to denie mee this request of mine : For my Deare De Merfion, if thou wilt not bee pleased to bee my Husband, yet bee not offended to remember that I am thy Wife, and wish all, that as I desire thy returne, so that I haue not deserved thy departure : But if thou wilt still bee inexorable to my requests, these Lines of mine, which I write thee rather with Teares then Inke, shall beare witness betwixt thy selfe and mee, of my Kindnesse, of thy Crueltie, and how my Life sought thy Affection, though my Death could neither finde, nor obtaine it.

LA VASSELAY.

De

De Merson reads this Letter with laughter; yea, hee is so insensible of her Lines, Requests, and Teares, as if another had sent him newes of her Death, as shee her selfe did of her Sicknesse, it had beene farre more pleasing, and better welcome to him. But thinking how to gall her to the quicke, to the end hee might hencefoorth saue her the labour to write him any more Letters, and himselfe to receiue and peruse them, hee returnes her this sharpe and bitter answer:

I*T is thy Errours, not my Absence, which hath exchanged thy Ioyes into Sorrowes; and if thy life draw neere her period, they cannot bee farre from theirs. My sight is a poore content for thee to beare to thy graue, sith as a Christian, thou shouldest delight to see none but thy Sauour, nor bee Ambitious to liue in any armes but his: and if thou hold not this to be Charitie, I know others cannot repute it Crueltie. That I am thy Husband I graunt, and that thou art my Wife, I not denie: But yet I feare thy heart knowes, though thy Pen affirme the contrary, that I haue farre more reason for my departure, then thou to desire my returne. And if thou wilt yet knowe more, if the Inke wherewith thou writest thy Letter bee Teares, pray GOD thou diddest not bedawe Gratiana's Winding-sheete and Coffin, both with her Teares, and Blood: for haddest thou not beene cruell, yea, inhumane to her, I would neuer haue beene unkinde to thee: And to conclude, liue as happy, as I feare her death will make thee dye miserable.*

DE MERSON.

V 2

The

The receit and perusall of this Letter, doth not on-ly grieue but afflict and torment *La Vasselay* : for the very remembrance of *De Merson* his suspition and apprehension, that she had a hand in the death of *Gratiana*, doth as it were pierce her heart, as well with feare as sorrow : for as her pouertie lay before at his mercy, so now she knowes doth her life; and that sith he will not loue her, hee may chance so maligne and hate her, as to reueale it. Whereupon to secure her feare, and to warrant the safetie of her life, she soone exchangeth her loue into hatred, and her affection and ielousie, into enuy towards him; yea, her intraged and incensed thoughts, engenger and imprint such bloody designs of reuenge in her heart, as abandoning the feare and grace of *God*, she impiously concludes a match with the Deuill, to dispatch and murder him; and from which bloody and damnable designe, no regard of *God*, or her *Soule*, nor respect of *Heauen* or *Hell*, can or shall diuert her : when ouerpassing a small parcell of time, wherein she ruminated and pondered, how shee should send him from this life to another : at last her malicious curiositie makes her thoughts fall on *La Villette*, being his Gentleman, who still followed him, as holding him a fit Agent to attempt, and instrument to finish this bloody busines, which so much imported her content and safetie; grounding her reasons vpon the greatnes of his heart and mind, and the weaknesse of his purse & meanes; as if pouertie were a sufficient cause and priuiledge to commit so treacherous and bloody a fact : When knowing him to bee then in *Mans*, receiuing vp his Masters Rents, she sends for him; to whom (the dore bolted) she tells him she is to request his secrecy in a businesse

businessse which infinitely tends to his good. He promiseth it her : but she will haue him sweare thereunto, which he doth : when with sighs and teares, making a bitter inuectiue, and recapitulation of her Husband, his masters vnderferued indignitie and crueltie towards her ; she then and there makes a proposition to him, to murder him for her, and that she will giue him a thousand crownes to effect it. *La Villette* seeing the greatnesse of the danger, in that of the crime, seemes not onely discontented, but amazed hereat : for although he loue gold well, yet hee will not purchase it at so deare a rate, and base and damnable a price, as that of his masters blood : when seeing shee could not preuaile, she againe puts him in mind of his oath to secrecy ; which he againe vowes neuer to infringe or violate : and withall, like a good *Servant*, seekes to dissuade and diuert her from such bloody thoughts and attempts. Had *La Villette* remained in the puritie and candeur of this his Religious and Christian Resolution, not to imbrue or distaine his hands in the innocent blood of his Master, it would haue made him as happy, as wee shall shortly see him miserable, in attempting and executing the contrary : for as a propension and resolution to *Vertue*, breeds not onely *Honour*, but safetie ; so the contrary effects thereof, produce not onely shame, but misery. To foresee sinne, is a pious wisdom ; but to preuent and eschew it, is alwayes a most wise and blessed pietie.

And whereas *Time* should rather decrease then increase ; and rather root out, then plant *Malice* in our thoughts, and *Envy* in our Resolutions, yet directly contrary, that of *La Vasselay* to her husband *De Merson*, doth not dye, but liue, will not fade but flourish :

for a moneth or two more being runne out, and expired, and *La Vilette* againe in *Mans*, her malice to her husband is so inueterate and implacable, as she againe sends for him to her house, where (in great secrecie and intended affection) shee tels him, that if he will murder his master, she within sixe moneths will marry him in requitall, and not onely liue his faithfull wife, but die his obedient and constant handmaid. Now although her first proffer of a thousand crowns could not procure of *La Vilette*, these her sugred speeches, which she intermixeth with kisses, and the consideration of so many thousands, which her estate not onely promiseth, but assureth, doth; so as forgetting his former vertue, to remember his future vice, he (like a damnable villaine) sweares to her to effect it: which wretched Verball contract, they interchangeably seale with oathes and kisses, which (if they had had any feare of God, or care of their saluations) they should haue detested with horror, and abhorred with detestation: neither will his malice (or the Deuill the Author thereof) giue him leaue to protract or defer it: for hauing resolved to murder him as he rides abroad; his master on a time being inuited to a generall hunting, by the *Baron* of Saint *Susanna* (sonne and heire to *Monsieur de Varennes*) at his said Towne of *Susanna*, as he came riding homewards towards his Fathes house of *Manfrelle*, he in the midst of a great wood, neere vnto the small village of Saint *Georges*, riding behind his master, dischargeth his Pistoll, loaden with a brace of bullets thorow his reynes, which makes him instantly fall off dead from his horse to the ground. When this hellish seruant *La Vilette*, seeing his master deuoyd of breath, and groueling

groueling and weltring in his blood, he hauing acted the part of a sinnefull Denill, in committing this cruell murder, now resolues to assume, and represent that of a subtrill Hypocrite in concealing it: when determining to report that they were both assaulted, and his master slaine by theeues; he to make all his actions conduce and looke that way, chargeth his Pistoll againe with another brace of bullets, and shoots thorow his owne hat, giues himselfe a cut ore his left hand, and then breakes his Rapier, takes his owne Pistoll, and his Masters Rapier, and throwes it into a Pond close adioyning; takes likewise his masters purse and watch foorth his pocket, and hides it secretly: and then the more cunningly and knauishly to bleare and deceiue the eyes of the world, thereby to make this his Hypocrisie passe the currenter, he hauing purposedly provided himselfe of two small cords; with the one he binds both his owne feet, and with the other (by a pritty sleight) slips therein his armes behind his backe, and then setting himselfe against a tree, he very pittifully weepes, groanes, and cries out vpon the theeues and murtherers of his Master *De Mersſon*. when three *Gentlemen* of Brittain, traouelling that way towards *Paris*, repaire to his assistance, whom they find out by his cries: to whom he relates that fise theeues had assaulted his Master and himselfe, that hee fought in the defence as long as his sword held; that his master was kild with a Pistoll, then rob'd, and himselfe shot thorow, and wounded, and bound as they saw. When these three *Brittish Gentlemen*, grieuing at this mournefull accident, and bloody spectacle, they instantly cut the cords where-with he was bound, and so hauing conueyed the dead corps

corps to the next Cottage, they runne vp and downe the wood to find out these theeues and murtherers, but in vaine: so *La Villette* hauing thanked these Gentlemen for their affection and charity towards his dead master, and liuing selfe: He with a wonderfull exteriour shew of sorrow, takes care for the speedy and decent transporting home of his breathlesse Master to *Manfrelle*: where his mournfull Father receiues, and buries him with infinite griefe, lamentation, and teares.

In the meane time, this murtherous *La Villette* giues priuate intelligence therof to the bloody *La Vasselay*, who although she inwardly receiue this newes with extreme content & ioy, to see her selfe freed of so vnkind and ingratefull a husband, yet publicquely to the eye of the world (thereby the better to delude and deceiue the world, she contrariwise takes on blackes, seeming to be exceedingly mournfull, pensiue, and sorrowfull thereat: but *God* will shortly discover the falshood of these her teares; and in the triumphs of his reuenge, pull off the maske of this her dessembling and treacherous *Hypocrisie*: For as *Mans*, *Lauall*, *Angiers*, and all the adiacent Townes and Countrey, grieues at this lamentable murther of *De Merson*: so they as much admire and wonder to see his old widow *La Vasselay* so shortly married & espoused to his Gentleman *La Villette*, whose Nuptials are celebrated and consummated farre within the tearme of fixe moneths after. For the curious wits of these Citties & countreys, considering what a preposterous course and resolution this was for her to mary her husbands man, and withall, so soone; as also that there was none other present but himselfe, when his Master *De Merson*

Merson was murdered, it is vmbragious; and leaues a spice of feare, and sting of suspition in their heads; that there was more in the wind then was yet knowne, and therfore knowing no more, they deferre the detection thereof, to the prouidence and pleasure of *God*, who best, yea, who onely knowes in *Heauen*, how to conduct and mannage the actions heré below on *Earth*: and now indeed the very time is come, that the Lord will no longer permit these their cruell and bloody murthers to be concealed, but will bring them soorth to receiue condigne punishment: and for want of other euidence, and witnesses, they themselves shall be witnesses against themselves. And although *La Vasselay's* poysoning of *Gratiana*, and *La Villette's* pistolling of his master *De Merson*, were cunningly contriued, and secretly perpetrated; yet wee shall see the last of these bloody murthers occasion the discouery and detection of the first, and both of them most seuerely and sharply punished for these their bloody crimes and horrible offences. *The manner is thus.*

These two execrable wretches, *La Villette*, and *La Vasselay* haue not liued married aboue some seuen or eight monethes, but he being deeply in Lawe with *Monsieur De Mansfrelle*, his *Predecessors* father, for the detention of some lands and writings, hee takes an occasion to ride home to his house of *Mansfrelle* to him, to conferre of the differences, and by the way falls into the company of some *Marchants* of *Lauall*, & *Vittry*, who were returning from the Faire of *Chartres*: when ryding together for the space of almost a whole dayes iourney, the secret prouidence, & sacred pleasure of *God* had so ordayned, that *La Villette's*

horse who bore him quietly and safely before, on a Sunday, first goes back-wards in despite of his spur or swich, and then standing an end on his two hind legges, falles quite backe with him, and almost breakes the bulke and truncke of his body: when hauing hardly the power to speake, his breath sayling him, and he seeing no way but death for him, and the hideous image thereof apparantly before his eyes, the Spirit of *God* doth so operate with his sinnefull soule, as he there confesseth how his wicked wife *La Passelay* had caused him to murther his master *De Merson*, whom he shot to death with his Pistoll; that she first seduced him with a thousand Crownes to performe it, which he refused; but then her content to marry him, made him not onely attempt, but finish that bloody businesse, whereof now from his very heart and soule he repented himselfe, and beseeched the Lord to forgiue it him.

But heere before the *Readers* curiositie carry him further, let me in the name and feare of *God*, both request and coniure him, to stand amazed, and wonder with me, at his sacred prouidence, and inscrutable wisdom and iudgement, which most miraculously concurreth and shines in this accedent, and especially in three essentiall and most apparent circumstances thereof: For it was on the very same horse, the same day twelue month, & in the very same wood, & place, where this execrable wretch *La Villette* formerly murthered his master *De Merson*: Famous, and notorious circumstances, which deserue to be obserued, and remarked of all the children of *God*, yea, & to be imprinted and ingrauen in their hearts and memories, thereby to deter vs from the like crimes of murther.

Now

Now these honest Merchants of *Lauall*, and *Vittry* (as much in charity to *La Villetes* life, as in execration of that confessed murder of his Master *De Merson*) conuey him to an Inne in *Saint Georges*, when expecting euery minute, that he would dye in their hands, they send away poast to aduertise the *Presidiall Court* of *Mans* heereof, (within whose Iurisdiction *Saint Georges* was) who speedily command *La Villette* to be brought thither to them aliue or dead: But *God* reserued him from that naturall, to a more infamous death, and made him liue till he came thither; where againe he confesseth this his foule murder of his master *De Merson*, and likewise accuseth *La Vasselay* to be the sole instigator thereof, as wee haue formerly heard and vnderstood. Whereupon hee is no sooner examined, but this bloody old Hagge is likewise imprisoned: who with many asseuerations and teares, denies, and retorts this foule crime from her selfe to him. But her Iudges are too wise to belecue the weaknesse and inualiditie of this her foolish iustification: So whiles they are consulting on her, *De Bremay* hauing notice of all these accidents, but especially of *La Vasselays* imprisonment; he (stil apprehending and fearing, that shee vndoubtedly was the death of his daughter *Gratiana*) takes Poast from *Nogent*, to *Mans*; where he accuseth her thereof to the *Cryminell Iudges* of that *Presidiall Court*: who ypon these her double accusations, adiudge her to the Racke, when at the very first torment thereof, she at last (preferring the life of her soule, before that of her body) confelleth her selfe to be the Actor of her first crime of *Murder*, and the *Authour* of the second: when, and whereupon the *Iudges* (resembling themselves)

in detestation, and for expiation of these her soule crimes, condemne him to be hangd, and shee to bee burnt aliue; which the next day, at the common place of execution (neere the *Halles*) in *Mans*, is accordingly executed, in the presence, and to the content of a world of people of that citie, who as much abhorre the enormitie of these their bloody crimes, as they reioyce and glorifie God, for this their (not so seuer, as deserued) punishments.

As for *La Villette* hee (like an impious *Christian*) said little else, but that which he had formerly spoken and deliuered in the wood, at the receiuing of his fall; onely he said, That he had well hoped, that his great wealth which hee had with *La Vasselay*, would haue sheltred and preserued him from this infamous death for murthering her Husband, and his Master, *De Merson*.

But as for this bloody Beldame, and wretched old Fury, *La Vasselay*, she was content to grieve at *Grati-ana's* death, though not to lament or pitie that of her Husband *De Mersons*: yea, and although she seemed to blame her Ielousie towards her; yet her age was so wretchedly instructed in pietie, as she could not find in her heart, either to make an *Apologie*, or any way to seeme repentant for her inhumane crueltie towards him: For as she demanded pardon of *De Brimay* for poysoning his daughter; so she spake not a word tending that way, to *Manfrelle*, for causing his sonne to be pistoll'd; only in particular tearmes, she requested *God* to forgine the vanitie of her youth; and in generall ones, the world to forget the offences and crimes of her age. And so coniuring all olde Widdowes and Wiues, to beware by her mournfull and execrable

crable example; her flames and prayers made expiation for the offence of her body, and her soule mounted and fled to *Heaven*, to craue remission and pardon of *God*, who was the only *Creator* of the one, and *Redeemer* of the other.

And such were the deplorable, yet deserved ends of this bloody and wretched couple, *La Vasselay* and *La Villette*, for so cruelly murdering harmlesse *Gratiana*, and innocent *De Merson*: And thus did *Gods* all-seeing, and sacred Iustice, iustly triumph ore these their crying and execrable crimes. O that their examples may engender and propagate our reformation; and that the reading of this their lamentable *History* may teach vs, not onely how to meditate thereon, but also how to amend thereby.

X 3 THE



THE
TRIUMPHS OF
GODS REVENGE A-

gainst the crying and execrable

Sinne of Murther.

History XIV.

Fidelia and Cælestina cause Carpi and Monteleone, with their two Laquayes, Lorenzo and Anselmo, to murther their Father Captaine Benevente, which they performe. Monteleone and his Laquay Anselmo are drown'd, Fidelia hangs her selfe, Lorenzo is hanged for a robbery, and on the gallowes confesseth the murthering of Benevente, Carpi hath his right hand, then his head cut off; Cælestina is beheaded and her body burnt.

OUr best parts being our Vertues and our chiefe and Soueraigne Vertue, the purity and sanctity of our selues; how can wee neglect those, or not regard this, except we resolute to see our selues miserable in this life, and our soules wretched in that to come: and as charity is the cymment of our other vertues, so envy (her opposite) is the subuersion of this our charity; from whence flowes rage, reuenge, and many times murther, (her frequent (and almost) her inseparable companions:)

panions :) but of all degrees of malice and enuy, can there be any so inhumane and diabolically, as for two gracelesse daughters to plot the death of their owne father ; and to seduce and obtaine their two louers to act and performe it : whereof in this ensuing History, we shall see a most barbarous and bloody President, as also their condigne punishments afflicted on them for the same. In the reading whereof, O that we may haue the grace by the sight of these their fearefull crimes and punishments, to reforme and preuent our owne ; that we may looke on their cruelty with charity, on their rage with reason, on their errors with compassion, on their desperation with pittie, and on their inhumanity with pietie ; that the meditation and contemplation thereof, may terrifie our choller : quench both the fire of our lust, and the flames of our reuenge ; so shall our faiths be fortified, our passions reformed, our affections purified, & our actions eternally both blessed and sanctified : to which end, I haue written and diuulged it. So Christian Reader, if thou make this thy end in perusing it, thou wilt then not faile to receiue comfort thereby : and therefore faile not to giue God the Glory.

MAny yeeres since the Duke of *Ossuna* (vnder the command of *Spaine* his master) was made *Viceroy* of the Noble Kingdome of *Naples*, the which hee gouerned with much reputation and honour, although his fortunes or actions (how iustly or iniustly I know not) haue since suffered and received an Eclipse. In the Cittie of *Oiranto*, within the *Province* of *Apulia*, there dwelt an ancient rich and valiant Gentleman, (nobly descended) rearm'd Captaine *Bene-*
vente,

vente, who by his deceased Lady *Sophia Elianora*, (Niece to the Duke of *Piombino*) had left him two daughters and a sonne, he tearmed *Signior Richardo Alcasero*, they two, the Ladies *Fidelia* and *Celestina*, names indeed, which they will no way deserue; but from whom they will solely dissent and derogate, through their hellish vices, and inhumane dispositions to blood and murther: we may grace our names; but our names cannot grace vs. *Alcasero* liues not at home with his father, but for the most part at *Naples*, as a chiefe *Gentleman* retayning to the *Viceroy*: where he profiteth so well in riding and tilting (a noble vertue and exercise, (beyond all other *Italianes*) naturall and hereditary to the *Neopolitanes*,) that he purchased the name of a bold and braue Cavalier, but for *Fidelia* and *Celestina*, the clockes of their youth hauing stroke twentie, and eightene, the Captaine their father, (thinking it dangerous to haue Ladies of their yeares and descent farre from him) keepees them at home, that his care may provide them good husbands, and his eye preuent them from matching with others. It is as great a blessing in children to haue louing Parents, as for them to haue obedient children: and had their obedience answered his affection, and their duty his providence: we had not seene the Theatre of this their History so besprinkled, and gored with such great effusion of blood.

This Captaine *Benevente* their father, (for his blood, wealth and generosity) was beloued and honoured of all the Nobility of *Apulia*, and for his many seruices, both by sea and land, was held in so great esteeme in *Ostranto*; that his house was an *Academie*, where all the Gallants both of Citie and Countrey refor-

resorted to backe great Horses, to runne at the Ring, and to practise other such Courtly and Martiall Exercises, whereunto this old *Captaine*, as well in his age, as youth, was exceedingly addicted: so, as the beaury of his two daughters, *Fidelia*, & *Calestina* could not be long, either vnscene, or vnadmired: for they grew so perfectly fayre, of so sweet complexions and proper statures, that they were iustly reputed and held to bee the *Paragons* of *Beautie*, not onely of *Apulia*, but of *Italy*: so as beautie being the Gold and Diamonds of *Nature*; this of theirs (so sweet in its influence, and so excellent and delicious in that sweetness) drew all mens eyes to loue them, many mens hearts to adore them: so had they beene as rich in Vertue, as in Beautie, they had liued more fortunate, and neither their friendes nor enemies should haue liued to haue scene them dye so miserably; for now that proues their ruine, which might haue been their glory. They are both of them sought in marriage, by many *Barons* and *Caualiers*, as well at home as abroad; but the *Captaine* their father will not giue eare, nor hearken to any, nor once permit that such motion be moued him: They are so immodest, as they grieve hereat, and are extreemely sorrowfull, to see that a few yeares past away, makes their Beauties rather fade then flourish: where *Vertue* graceth not *Beautie*, as well as *Beautie*, *Vertue*, it is often a presage and forerunner of a fortune as fatall, as miserable.

But as their thoughts were too impatient and immodest, to giue way to such incontinent and irregular conceits; so on the other side, the *Captaine* their father, was too seuer, and withall too vnkind, I may say, cruell, to hinder them from *Marriage*, sith their

beautie and age had long since made them both meritorious and capable of it : It was in them immodestie; in him, vnkindnesse, to propose such ends, to their desires and resolutions : for as hee hath authoritie to exact obedience from them, so haue they likewise reason to expect fatherly affection, and care from him. But hee is more affected and addicted to his wealth and couetousnesse, then inclined to regard his daughters content; and therefore is fully resolved, not as yet to marry them, which is a resolution better left then imbraced, and infringed then kept of him; sith it may bring forth effects contrary both to his hopes and desires. It is commonly dangerous for *Parents*, to content themselues with their childrens discontents : for where *Nature* is crossed, it many times degenerates, and prooues vnnaturall, as the *Cataclysts* of *Nylus* make it submerge and wash *Egypt* with her inundation : But *Fidelia*, and *Celestina*, will make triall of one inuention and conclusion more before they will giue way to their distaste, or strike faile to their choller and reuenge. They see their father is resolute, and seuer in nipping their hopes, and crossing their desires of mariage; and yet they hope, that although they cannot preuaile with him, that their brother *Alcasero* may : to which end, the sooner to obtaine and crowne their desires with content, they consult together, and so by a confident friend of theirs, send him this Letter to *Naples* :

D If payring of our Fathers resolution to marry vs, wee haue no other refuge or recourse, but to thy selfe, and thy affection, in requesting thee powerfully to sollicite him heerein, that hee may not preferre his golde before our content,

content, and consequently his hopes before our despaire: neither could our hearts, or thoughts perswade vs; either to imploy or acquaint any other but thy selfe with these our desires, which Modesty would haue suppressed, but that Truth contradicted and opposed it: for his seueritie and crueltie is such towards vs; that although wee are sought in marriage by diners Cavaliers our Superiours, yet hee will not permit vs to bee seene, much lesse to be wedded of any. Ioyne then thy power to our wishes and prayers, and thy affection to the procuring of our contents; and we then doubt not, but to bee as happy in a Brother, as otherwise wee feare, wee shall see our selues unfortunate, yea, miserable in a Father: and as thou canst not forget our discent and Blood; so we zealously pray and beseech thee, to remember, if not our Beautie, our Youth.

FIDELIA.

CALESTINA.

Their Brother receiues this their Letter: he is too braue, generous, and courteous, to be vnkind to any, especially to young Ladies, and most especially to his sisters, whose content he makes and reputes his owne. He comes to *Otranto*, deales effectually with the *Captaine* his father herein, who gives him this answer: That he hath provided the *Baron of Carpi* for *Fidelis*, and the Knight *Bartholomeo Monte-leone* for *Calestina*; and that within fifteene dayes they are to come to *Otranto* to see them: which newes doth exceedingly reioyce first himself, then his sisters: but their ioy shall not last long, but be buried as soone as borne. Within the prefixed time these two Noble men come, but they are hatefull, and not pleasing to *Fidelis*, and *Calestina*; for the *Barron of Carpi* is crook-backt, and

squint-eyed, and *Monte-leone* is lame of one leg. These Ladies valewe their beauty at too high a rate, to bestow it on such deformed husbands: and although *Venus* accepteth of *Vulcan*, yet they will haue none of these; because they deeme no hell to that of a discontented bed: heretofore they wished for Sutors, and now they wish they were well ridd of these; and so sacrificing to their owne contents, they set vp this resolution in their hearts & soules, that they will rather dye maydens, then liue to see themselues wiues to such husbands. Their father receiues *Carpi* & *Monte-leone* courteously, and entertaines them nobly, according to their ranke and merits: he tells his daughters plainly, that they shall marry these, and none others. Thus the Barke of these their resolutions, are surprisid and beaten with two contrary winds: he will bee obeyed of his daughters, and they will be commanded of their father in all things, but not in this of their Marriage.

It is neuer good for parents, to force the affections of their children in their marriages, sith it is a busines which not onely liues, but dyes with them; but withall, their owne wills must neither bee their law, nor their guide: for their Parents haue, (or at least should haue) more experience and iudgement then they, to see who are, and who are not fit matches for them: But where authority opposeth affection, or affection, reason, there such marriages are still vshered on with discontent, and wayted and attended on with misery. Likewise, there is a great respect and consideration to be obserued by Parents, in the inclinations and natures of their children: for some will be perswaded, or reproued with a word, wheras others will become
more

more headstrong and rebellious with menaces and threats. Had this Captaine attempted and practised the first, and not the second toward these two Ladies his daughters, peradventure they had neuer leapt from reason to rage, from obedience to contempt, nor from hope to dispaire; yea, I dare presume to averre with truth and safety, that we should haue seene them all as happie, as I now feare we shall see them miserable.

But to proceed with their History, they are pressed by the Captaine their father, and importuned by the two noble men their Surors, to finish and confirme these contracts. But *Fidela* and *Celestina* with a true semblance of distaste, and yet a false shew of curtesie, giue the deniall to their father in particuler tearmes, and to them in generall: He stormes at their disobedience, and they impute this excuse of theirs, to modestie, rather then vnkindnesse: They flatter themselves with this hope, that sith they are sayre, they must be courteous, and cannot be cruell; or if the contrary, that the Captaine their father will so manage his daughters affections, as all things shall sort to their desires and expectations; but they shall come too short of their hopes: for they are neither reserued for the Ladies, nor the Ladies for them: but whiles thus they are busie in aduancing the proceesse of their affections, *Fidelia* and *Celestina* attempt a contrary enterprise: for they with teares and prayers, request their brother *Alcasero*, importunately to sollicite their Father in their behalfe: that he will not enforce them to marry those whom they cannot affect, much lesse obey: which like a noble and deare brother hee performes with much zeale and perswasion: but hee

cannot preuaile with him, nor bring them any other answere, then that they must and shall marry them, and onely them.

Had this resolution of their father beene more courteous, and lesse rigorous towards his daughters, this History of theirs, had not deserued so much pittie and compassion, nor would haue drawen so many sighes from the hearers, or teares from the Readers: for now seeing their father cruelly resolved to offer violence to their affections, they begin to hate him, because he wil not better loue them. And here (O here) they enter into deuillish machinations, and hellish conspiracies against him: for as he plots their discontents, so doe they his destruction. *Fidelia* and *Calestina* see their blood, and cause one, and therefore so they pretend shall be their fortunes: they would reueale their intents and designes each to other, but the fact is so foule and vnnaturall, as for a while they cannot, but they need no other Oratory then their owne sullen and discontented lookes, for either of them may read a whole Lecture of griefe and choller in each others eyes, till at length tyred with the importunity of their father, and the impaciency of *Carpi*, and *Monteleone*: *Fidelia* as the more audacious of the two, first breakes it to her sister *Calestina*, in this manner. That she had rather die, then be compelled to marry one whom she cannot affect: that the *Baron* of *Carpi* is not for her, nor she for him; and that sith her father is resolute in this match, (although she be his daughter) shee had rather see him laid in his graue, then her selfe in *Carpi's* bedde. There needs not many reasons, to perswade that which we desire, For *Calestina* tells her sister plainly, that she (in all points)

points) ioynes and concurre in opinion with her, adding withall, that the sooner their father is dispatched, the better; because she knowes they shall neuer receiue any content on *Earth*, till he be in *Heauen*: and so they conclude he shall die.

But *alas*, what hellish & deuilish daughters are these, to seeke the death of their father, of whom they haue receiued their liues? who euer read of a *Parricide* more inhumanely cruell, or impiously bloody? so if euer murther went vnreuedged, this will not; for wee shall see the Authors and Actors thereof most seuerely punished for the same. Men and women may bee secret in their sinnes, but *God* will be iust in his decrees, and sacred in his iudgements: what a religious resolution had it beene in them, to haue retired, and not aduanced in this their damnable attempt; but they are too prophane, to haue so much pitty, and too outrageous to hearken to this religious reason: yea, they are too impious to hearken to *Grace*, and too reuengefull and Bloody minded, to giue care eitherto *Reason*, *Dutie*, or *Religion*. So now like two incensed and implacable furies, they consult how and in what manner they may free themselues of their father: *Fidelia* proposeth diuers degrees and seuerall sorts of murders, but *Celestina* likes none of them; in some she finds too much danger, in others too little assurance; and therefore as young as she is, she inuents a plot, as strange as subtil, and as malicious & diabolical as strange: she informs her, that to be rid of her father, there cannot be a securer course then to ingage the *Baron of Carpi*, and the Knight of *Monteleone* to murther him: *Fidelia* wonders hereat, saying, it will be impossible for them to be drawen to performe it;

it, sith they both know and see, that the *Captaine* their father loues them so well, as will or nill, they must be their husbands. But *Calestina's* reuengefull plot is further fetcht, and more cunningly spunne: for she hath not begun it, to leaue it raw and vnfinished; but is so confident in her deuillish industry, as she affirms shee will perfect and make it good. *Fidelia* demaunds how. *Calestina* answereth, That they both must make a feigned and flattering shew, to change their distaste, and now to affect *Carpi*, and *Monse-leone*, whom before they could not: that hauing in this manner drawn them to their lure, when they attempt to vrge Marriage, they shall both agree to informe them, that it is impossible for them to obtaine it, whiles the *Captaine* their father liues, sith albeit in outward appearance hee make a faire shew to make them their husbands, yet that he meanes and intends nothing lesse; for that he hath giuen them expresse charge and command (at any hand) not to loue or affect them; which is the maine and sole cause, that hath so long withheld them from making sooner demonstrations of their affections towards them: and this (quoth shee) will occasion and prouoke them to attempt it; adding, that by this meanes, they may giue two strokes with one stone, and so not onely be rid of our father, but likewise of *Carpi* and *Monte-leone*, who peradventure may be apprehended, and executed for the fact; and for our safegard and security, we will powerfully coniure and sweare them to secrecie.

There is no webb finer then that of the Spider, nor treachery subtiller then that of a woman, especially if shee contemne Charity for Reuenge, her Soule for her Body, God for *Sathan*, and consequently *Heauen* for

for Hell: how else could this young Lady lodge so reuengeful a heart in so sweet a body? or shroud such bloody conceits and inuentions vnder so faire and so beautifull a complexion?

But the *Panther*, though his skinne be faire, yet his breath is infectious: and we many times see, that the foulest Snake lurkes vnder the greenest and beautifullest leaues. *Fidelia* giues an attentiu care to this her sisters bloody *Stratagem* and designe: shee finds it sure, and the probabilities thereof apparant and easie, and therefore approues of it. So these two beautifull, yet bloody sisters vow, without delay, to set it on foot, and in practise. It is the nature of *Reuenge*, to looke forwards, seldome backwards: but did we measure the beginning by the end, as well as the end by the beginning, our affections would sauour of far more Religion, and of farre lesse impietie, and wee should then reioyce in that which wee must now repent, but cannot remedy. They take time at aduantage, and pertinently acquaint *Carpi* and *Monte-leone* with it. The passions of affection prooue often more powerfull then those of Reason, they suffer themselves to bee vanquished and ledd away by the pure beautie, and sweet *Oratory* of these two discontented and treacherous Ladies, without considering what poyson lurkes vnder their speeches, and danger vnder their tongues: They commit a grosse and maine error, in relying more on the daughters youth, then the fathers grauitie; on their verball, then his reall affection; and so they ingage themselves to the daughters, in a very short time to free them of the *Captaine* their father. It was a base vice in Gentlemen of their ranke, to violate the Lawes of Hospitalitie, in so high

a degree, as to kill him, who loued them so dearly, and entertained them so courteously; and it is strange, that both their humours were so strangely vitious, as to concurre and sympathize in the attempt of this execrable murther: But what cannot vice performe, or Ladies procure of their Louers, at least if they loue Beautie better then Vertue, and Pleasure, then Pietie?

Captaine *Benevente* is many times accustomed after dinner to ride to his Vineyard, and now and then to *Alpiata*, a neighbour village, where he is familiarly (if not too familiarly) acquainted with a Tennants wife of his, whom he loued in her youth, and cannot forsake in her middle age: perseuerance in vice neuer makes a good end: a single sinne is distastfull; but the redoubling thereof, is both hatefull and odious to God. *Carpi* and *Monte-leone* take their two Laquaies, *Lorenzo* and *Anselmo* with them, as soone as they know the Captaine to be abroad, onely accompanied with his confident Gentleman *Fiamento*; and disguising themselues, they watch him at the corner of a wood, where of necessitie hee must passe. The euent answereth their bloody expectations and desires: they see *Benevente* and *Fiamento* approaching, riding a soft trot; when like so many Fiends and Deuils, they all foure rush forth the thickets, and (without any other forme) with their Swords and Pistols, (after some resistance) kill them dead to the ground: but this is not the end of their hellish malice and enuy; neither is the vn-sati-able thirst of their reuenge yet quenched: for they take these two murdered bodies (who are a fresh reeking and weltring in their blood) and carry them to a neighbour hill, and so throw them down into a deepe quarry

quarry full of thicke bushes and brambles, whereas they thought no mortall eye should euer haue seene them more, & then and there they consult vpon their flight. *Carpi* resolues to take poast for *Naples*, and there for a time to shroud himselfe among the multitude of the *Nobilitie* and *Coaches*, which grace and adorne that Citie: And *Monte-leone* resolues to hie towards *Brundusium*, with intent, that if these murderers were reuealed, and himselfe detected and accused, he would there embarque himselfe either for *Venice*, or *Malta*: but he hath not as yet made his peace and reckoning with God.

Leaue wee *Carpi*, and his Laquay poasting for *Naples*, and let vs see what accident will speedily befall *Monte-leone*. It is impossible for murder to goe long vnpunished; *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anselmo* shal ere they ride farre, see this position verified in themselves: He is prouided of two faire Gennets, one for himselfe, the other for his Laquay, and hauing taken his leaue of *Carpi*, away he goes for *Brundusium*; but he hath not ridden past twelue miles, before his owne horse fell downe dead vnder him, which doth something afflict and amaze him; but this is but the least part of his misery, and but the very beginning of his misfortune; he is enforced to make a vertue of necessity, so he rides his Laquayes horse, and he followes him on foot. It is impossible for a guiltie conscience to be secured from feare: he rides narrow lanes, and by-ways, but at last neere the village *Blanquettelle* he meets with a swift Ford, which is passable for horse, but not for foot: Here *Monte-leone* is constrained to take vp his Laquay *Anselmo* behind him, which hee doth; but being in the midst thereof, the horse stum-

Z 2

bles,

bles, and falls with both of them vnder him; which is done so suddenly, that *Monte-leone* had no time to cast off his Laquay, and so they are both drowned, and haue neither the *Grace* nor power to breath, or speake a word more.

Gods iudgements are secret and inscrutable: had they had time to repent, they had onely lost their liues; whereas now it is rather to be feared, then wished, they likewise runne the hazard of their soules. But as it is a vertue to thinke and censure charitably of the dead, so it must needs be a vice to doe the contrary. Heretofore they thirsted for blood, and (loe) now they haue their fill of water. All Elements are the seruants of *God*, but these two of fire and water, are the most terrible, the most impetuous. We haue but one way to come into the world, but diuers to go out of it: This is a testimony of our weaknesse, and of *Gods* power.

By this time Captaine *Beneuente*, and his man *Fiamento* are found wanting, and no newes to be had them: his house rings, & resounds with sorrow, all his seruants & friends mourn and lament for his absence, and his two accursed daughters, they seeme to be all in teares heereat: but wee shall shortly see this their hypocrisie and dissimulation both detected and reuenged. They lay all the Country to purchase newes of their father, and speedily by post aduertise their brother *Alcafero* hereof at *Naples*, who amazed hereat, comes away with all possible speed and expedition: His two sisters and himselfe wonderfully mourne and lament for the absence of their father; and now seeing siue dayes past, and no newes of him, they begin to suspect and feare, that he is made away
and

and murdered; and because *Fiamento* was alone with him, they suspect him of the fact, which they are the sooner induced to beleue, in regard hee is fled, and not to bee found: but they shall soone see the contrary; and that as hee was a faithfull seruant to their father his master, during his life, so hee was a true companion to him in his death. And although *Alcasero* his sonne vse all possible zeale and industry to find out his father, yet sith Earth cannot, now Heaven will reueale the newes, and sight of him. For as some neighbouring Gentlemen (his kinsfolkes and friends) are hunting of a Stagge neere *Alpiata*, they pursue him on horsebacke some five or sixe houres, and at last being tyred, he runnes for refuge and shelter, thorow the bushes and bryers, into the same olde Quarry, where the dead bodies of Captaine *Benevente*, and his man *Fiamento* were throwen. The Gentlemen Hunters descend from their horses, and with their swordes drawen, enter purposely to kill the Stagge, which they performe; when casting aside their eyes, they see two dead mens bodies, one neere the other, whose leggs, hands, and faces the Crowes had pitifully mangled and defaced. They are amazed at this mournfull and vnlooked for spectacle, when approaching to discerne them, they by their elowes find, and know them to be Captain *Benevente*, and his Gentleman *Fiamento*. They are astonished & amazed hereat; and so one of them rides backe poast to *Otranto*, to acquaint *Alcasero* his sonne hereof, who melting into teares, returnes with him neere to *Alpiata*, where to his vnspeakeable grieve, hee sees the dead bodyes both of his father and *Fiamento*, which before all the Hunters he caused to be searched, and finds that

his father (with a Pistoll bullet) was shot thorow the head in two places, and runne thorow the body with a Rapier in three; and that *Fiamento* had fve deepe wounds with a Rapier, and once shot thorowe the head. *Alcasero*, and the whole company grieue and lament at this sorrowfull newes; they know well that *Fiamento* did not set vpon the *Captaine* his father, and that neither of them had Pistolls: and though they might imagine it done by theeues, yet they were quickly cleared of that ielousie and suspition, because they finde rich Rings on his masters fingers, and store of gold in his pockets: So they referring the disco- uery of this bloody and damnable murther to *Time*, and to *God*, the Author and giuer of *Time*, *Alcasero* causeth the dead bodies, first of his father, then of *Fiamento* to be layd in a Coach, which he had purpose- ly caused to be brought thither; and so accompanied with all the Gentlemen, returnes with it to *Otranto*, where all the whole Citie lament and bewayle his tragicall disaster: and because these dead corpes of theirs haue receiued wrong, in being so long aboute ground, *Alcasero* that night giues them their due bu- rials, interring *Fiamento* decently, and his father ho- nourably, according as the necessity and stricnesse of the time would permit him.

It is now *Alcasero's* curiositie and care, to seeke out the murtherers of his *Father*; and for his sisters, they are so irreligious and wretched, as they think to mock God, and delude the world with their immoderate, yet counterfeit mourning; but it proceeds not from their hearts, much lesse from their soules. The mor- row after their Fathers buriall, they are all three in- formed, that *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anselmo*,
are

are drown'd, as they past the Riuer *Blanqueselle*; where at he wonders, and his two sisters reioyce and triumph, especially *Calestina*, who now sees her selfe freed, not onely of the *Captaine* her father whom she hated, but also of the Knight *Monte-leone* her Sutor, whom shee could not loue: Shee is so impious and gracelesse, as she doth reioyce, but will neither repent nor pitie at these accidents; yea, she so sleightly and triuially passeth ouer the remembrance of her fathers vntimely and bloody death, as if murder were no sinne, or that *God* had ordained no punishment for it: Shee weares her mourning attire and weeds, more for shew then sorrow: for her father was no sooner layd in his graue, but she builds many Castles of pleasure in the aire of her extrauagant & ambitious thoughts, vowing that ere long, shee will haue a *Gallant* of her owne choosing to her husband: but shee may come too short of her hopes, and perchance finde a halter for her necke, before a wedding Ring for her finger. As for her brother *Alcasero*, his thoughts are roauing and roaming another way: for he finds it strange, that the *Barron* of *Carpi* comes not to condole with him for his father, and to continue his sure and affection to his sister *Fidelia*, whereat hee both admires and wonders, and not onely takes it in ill part, but also begins to suspect, and to cast many doubts and iea-lousies thereon; and what the issue thereof will bee, or what effects it will produce, we shall shortly see. But a moneth or two being blowen away, *Carpi* hearing no suspition or talke of him, and thinking all things in a readinesse for him to bee assured, and contracted to his Lady and Mistris *Fidelia*, hee takes a newe Laquay, and apparrelling him
in

in a contrary Liury, sends him secretly to *Otranto*, with this Letter to her :

THere are some reasons that stay mee for not comming to *Otranto*, to condole with thee for the death of thy Father, which what they are, none can better imagine then thy selfe: when thy sorrowes are ouerblown, I will come to thee, in hope to bee as ioyfull in thy presence, as thy absence makes me miserable. I haue giuen thee so true and so reall a prooffe of my affection, as thou shouldest offer mee palpable iniustice, and to thy selfe extreame iniury so doubt thereof. For what greater testimony canst thou futurely expect, then to beleene I will euer prefer thy loue before mine owne life: if thy constancy answer mine, Heauen may, but Earth cannot crosse our desires. I pray signifie mee how thy brother stands affected to our affections; thy answeres shall haue many kisses, and I will euer both honour and blesse the hand that writ it.

CARPI.

The Laquay comes to *Otranto*, and findes out *Fidelia*, to whom (with much care and secrecie) he deliuers his Masters Lettter, and commends, and requesteth an answer. *Fidelia* receiues the one, and promisseth the other: but shee is perplexed and troubled in mind. Heere her thoughts make a stand, and consult whether shee shall open this Letter, or no. Her Conscience hath heretofore yeelded to the death of her Father; and now Religion beginnes to work vpon the life of her Conscience, which indeed is that of her Soule. Had shee perseuered in this course of pietie, her repentance might haue pleaded for her disobedience, and her contrition redeemed her crime; but

but shee forsakes the Helme that might haue steered her to the Port of happinesse, and safetie; and so fills the sayles of her resolutions with the winde of despayre, which threaten no lesse then to split the Barke of her life on the rocks of her destruction and death. Shee now beginnes to hate company, which before she loued, and to loue solitarinesse, which before shee hated; yea, the liuing picture of her dead Father, doth so haunt her thoughts, and frequent her imaginations, that wheresoeuer shee is, it is present with her. Remorse, as a *Vulture* gnawes at her heart and conscience; yea, though nothing do feare her, yet she feares all things. Shee sees no man running behinde her, but she thinks he purposely followes her to drag her to prison: shee is afraid of her owne shadow, and thinkes, that not onely euery tower, but euery house will fall vpon her: she will not come into any Boat, nor passe by any Riuer, Brook, or well, for feare of drowning. This dispaire of hers causeth her to be cold in her Religion, and frozen in her Prayers, which should bee both the preseruatiue, and *Amidore* of the soule: her speeches for the most part, are confused and distracted, and her looks sullen, fearfull, and gasty (the proper signes and symptomes of despaire.) *Carpi's* Laquay hauing stayed two dayes in *Otranto* for his answer, holds it his dutie to importune *Fidelia* to bee dispatched, the which that night she promifeth him; and now in a sad and melancholly humour shee breaks off *Carpi's* Letter, and peruseth it; which not onely renewes, but reuiues the remembrance of her fathers death; whereat she enters into so strange and so implacable a passion, as shee once had thought to haue throwen his Letter into the fire, and her selfe after.

Now shee is resolved to write backe to *Carpi*, and then presently shee changeth her resolution, and vowes shee will answere him with silence. But the Deuill is as subtrill as malicious; and so shee calles for Pen and Inke, and out of the dregs of discontent, and the gall of despayre, writes and returnes him this answere:

M^Y Fathers death hath altered my disposition; for I am now wholly addicted to mourning, & not to marriage. I pray trouble not thy selfe to leaue Naples, to come to condole with mee in Otranto: for the best comfort that I can receiue, is that it is impossible for me to receiue any: I neuer doubted of thy affection, nor will giue thee any iust cause to suspect, much lesse to feare mine. If this will not suffice, rest assured I haue resolved, that either my grane, or thy selfe shall be my Husband. How my Brother stands affected to thee, is a thing difficult for mee to vnderstand or know, sith I am onely his Sister, not his Secretary; but in all outward appearance, I thinke hee neither loues thee for my sake, nor my selfe for thine. Live thou as happy, as I feare I shall dye miserable.

FIDELIA.

What a fearefull Letter is this, either for *Fidelia* to send, or *Carpi* to receiue: but her distempered and distracted spirits can afford no other; and therefore she dispatcheth away the Laquay with this. And now (as if her thoughts transported her to hell) shee cannot be alone, for the Deuill is still with her: hee appeares to her in the shape of an *Angell* of Light, and proffers her mountaines of *Wealth*, and worldes of *Honour*, if shee will fall downe and adore him. To
rebell

rebell against God is a sinne; but to perseuere in our rebellion, is not onely a contempt, but a treason in the highest degree against God. The best of Gods people are commonly tempted; but those are and prooue the worst, who are ouercome with temptation. *Fortitude* is a principall and *soveraigne vertue* in *Christians*; and if we vanquish the Deuill, it is good for vs that he assaulted vs, sith those Victories (as well spirituall as temporall) are euer most glorious and honourable, which are archieued with greatest danger. Had *Fidelia* followed the current of this counsell, and the streame of this aduise, shee had neuer been so weake with God, nor so vnfaithfull to her selfe, as to destroy her selfe: but forsaking God, and contemning prayer, which is the true way to the truest felicitie, what can shee hope for but dispaire, or expect but destruction? Her brother *Alcasero*, and many of her kinsfolkes, neighbours, and friends (with their best zeale, and possible power) endeauour to perswade and comfort her; they exhort her to reade religious Bookes, and continually to pray: Shee hearkeneth to both these counsell, but neither can, or will not follow either: Her sleepes are but broken slumbers, and her slumbers but distracted dreames; and euer and anon it seemes (to the eyes of her mind and body) that the *Captaine* her father, doth both speake to her, and follow her. In a word, she is weary both of this world, and of her life; yea, dispaire, or rather the Deuill hath reduced her to this extream misery, and miserable extremitie, that she is ready to kisse that hand that would kill her, or that *Death* which would giue her death. Shee neuer sees a knife in the hands of another, but shee wisheth it in her owne heart: her Conscience doth so terri-

bly accuse her, and her thoughts giue in such bloody euidence against her Conscience and selfe, for occasioning her fathers murther, that she resolues she must dye, and therefore disdaines to liue. And now comes her sister *Celestina* to her, to perswade and conferre with her; but shee will prooue but a miserable Comforter. *Fidelia* sees her with hatred and detestation; and when shee begins to speake, very peremptorily and mournfully cuts of her speeches thus: *Ah sister, I would wee had slept when we plotted our fathers death; for in seeking his ruine, wee shall assuredly finde out our owne: Prouide you for your safetie, for I am past hope of mine; and so get you out of my sights.* I know not whether the beginning of this her speech sauoured more of *Heauen*, then the end thereof doth of *Hell*: for sure if wee passe hope, wee come too short of saluation; and if wee forsake that, this infallibly will forsake vs.

This poore, or rather this miserable *Gentlewoman*, hauing alwayes her murdered *Father* before her eyes (which incessantly haunts her as a ghost, and yet she is inforced to follow it as her shaddow) is powerfully allured and prouoked by the instigation of the *Deuill*, in what manner, or at what rate soeuer to dispatch her selfe, being so wretchedly instructed in faith and pietie, as shee addes and beleeueth, that the end of her life will prooue not onely the end of her afflictions, but the beginning of her ioyes. But, O poore *Fidelia*, with a thousand pities and teares, I both pitie and grieue, to see thee beleeueth so infermall an Aduocate: for what ioyes either will hee, or can he giue thee? Why, nothing but bondage, for libertie; torments, for pleasures; and tortures for delights:

or

or if thou wilt haue me shew thee, whereat his flattering oratory, or sugred insinuation tendeth, it is onely to haue thee destroy thy body in earth, that (as a triumph and *Trophee* to the enlargement of his obscure kingdome) hee may drag thy body and soule to hell fire. But *Fidelia* is as constant in her sinne, as impious in her resolution; and so (all delayes set apart) shee seekes the meanes to destroy her selfe: shee procures poyson, and takes it; but the effect & operation thereof answers not her desires. I know not whether she be more impatient to liue, then willing to die. We neuer want inuention, sildome meanes to doe euill: A little penknife of hers, shall in her conceit performe that which poyson could not: she seekes it, and now remembers it is with her paire of kniues in the pocket of her best gowne: she flies to her Wardrope, and so to her pocket, but finds not her kniues, onely she finds her *Naples* silke girdle in stead thereof. The Deuills instruments are neuer farre to seeke; shee thinks it as good to strangle her throat, as to cut it: And heere comes her mournfull and deplorable *Tragedy*, she returns swiftly to her chamber, bolts the doore, and so (which I grieue and tremble to relate) fastens it to the teaster of her bed, and there hangs her selfe; and as it is faithfully reported, at that very instant, and for the space of an houre, it thundred and lightned so cruelly, as if *Heauen* and *Earth* were drawing to an end, that not onely the chamber where shee hung, but the whole house shaked thereat. The thunder being past, and the skies cleared, dinner is serued on the Table, and *Alcasero*, and *Celestina* ready to sit, they call for their sister *Fidelia*, but shee is not to bee found. One goes to her chamber, and returns, that her key is

without side, and the doore bolted within, and yet she answers not. They both flie from the table to her chamber, and call and knocke, but no answer. *Alcasero* commaunds his men to breake open the doore, which they doe, and there sees his sister *Fidelia* hanging to the bed-stead starke dead. They crie out as affrighted and amazed at this mournfull and pittifull spectacle, and with all speed take her downe. But she is breathlesse, though not cold; and they see all her face and body, which was wont to bee as white as snow, now to be coale blacke, and to stinke infinitely. These are the wofull effects, and lamentable fruites both of *Despayre* and *Murther*; O, may *Christians* of all rankes, and of both sexes, take heed by *Fidelia's* mournfull and miserable example, and withall remember that murther will still be reuenged and punished, especially that which is perpetrated by *Children* towards their *Parents*; a sin odious both to God and man, sith it not onely opposeth Nature, but Grace; Earth, but Heauen.

No sooner (with grieve, and mourning) hath *Alcasero* buried this his natural, yet vnnaturall sister *Fidelia*, but as his other sister *Calestina* weeps for her death, so she againe reioyceth that her sister hath no way reuealed the great businesse, which so much concernes her, I meane the murther of the *Captaine* her father. But *Time* will detect and reuenge both it and her. And that wee may not seeme extrauagant in the narration and vnfolding of this *Historie*, flie wee from *Ortranto* to *Naples*, and leaue wee the fatall and wofull Tragedy of *Fidelia*, to speake a little of the *Baron* of *Carpi* her Louer, who hath yet a great part to act vpon the *Theatre* of this *History*.

He hath no sooner receiued *Fidelias* Letter by his Laquay, but he much wonders and grieues at the contents thereof: hee sees her cold in her affection towards him, & hote in despaire to her selfe; and thinks, that as it is in her power to reioyce him with her affection, so it may be in his to comfort her with his presence: but her request and his Conscience informe him, that it is yet too soone to leaue *Naples*, to see *Otranto*; and yet that he may not faile in the complement and dutie of a Louer, hee resolues to visit her by Letter, though not in person, and so writes her these few Lines:

Were thy request not my Law, I would see *Fidelias* to comfort her, and comfort my selfe to see her: But sith I must bee so vnfortunate, as in one Letter to receiue two different sorrowes, my refusall, and thy despaire: what remedy (or Antidote) can I more aptly administer, then Patience to the first, and Prayer to the second. If thou weigh matters aright, I haue more occasion of sorrowe then thy selfe, and yet I am so farre from despayring, as I hope Time will giue thee consolation, and mee Content. Endeauour to loue thy selfe, and not to hate mee: so shalt thou drawe felicitie out of affliction, and I securitie out of danger. I hope thy Brother will not follow thy fathers steppes, his affection to thee shall bee mine to himselfe: Let thy second Letter giue mee but halfe as much ioy, as thy first did griefe, and I shall then triumph at my good fortune, as much as I now lament and pittie thine, and in that mine owne.

CARET.

Hec

Hee sends this Letter of his to *Otranto*, by his Laquay *Fiesco*, who carried his first, but he must go into another world, if hee meane to deliuer it to *Fidelia*: He comes to *Otranto*, and repayres to Captaine *Benevente's* house: whereas hee is walking in the second Court. *Alcafero* being very solitary and pensue at a window, leaning his head on his hand, and deeply and seriously thinking what two fatall disasters were befallen his house, as the losse of his Father and sister, he by chance espies this Laquay *Fiesco*; at whose sight his heart beats, and his blood very suddenly flasheth vp in his face: he exceedingly wonders hereat, and attributing euery extraordinary motion in himselfe a step or degreeto the discouery of his fathers murther, whereon his thoughts were alwayes fixed, and could neuer be withdrawen: he sends a Gentleman of his named *Plantinus*, to enquire whose Laquay it was, and what was his businesse. *Plantinus* descends, and examineth him; but hee is close, and will reueale nothing. He entreats him to enter, and taste the Wine, the which hee doth; when ingaging, and leauing him in the Celler, he trips vp to his Master, and acquaints him with his answer, adding withall, that some fiftene dayes since, he saw him heere before. *Alcafero* commands this Laquay to be brought before him; he examines him, but he will not discouer himselfe: he threatens him with the whip, and imprisonment, but he cannot preuaile. It is a vertue in a Seruant, to conceale his masters secrets. *Alcafero* is angry at his silence, and fidelitie, yet commends him: he bethinks himselfe of another course & subiltie, as well knowing, that faire words may obtaine that which threats cannot; he prayes him to dine with his seruants, and enioy-

enjoyne *Plantinus* to bring him to him in the Garden after dinner, the which he doth: *Alcasero* takes him apart, and tells him, that some fifteen dayes past, he saw him here. *Fiesco* answereth him with silence. *Alcasero* finds much perturbation in his heart, and distraction in his looks and speeches: hee thinks this boy can reueale something which he ought to know, and therefore thinks to surprise him with a siluer hooke; hee profers him twenty *Duckets*, and layes it downe before him, to discouer himselfe and his businesse.

Golde is, but ought not bee a powerfull bayt to indiscretion and pouertie. It is a poynt of small wisdom in *Noblemen*, to commit secrets of importance to those who haue too much folly, and too little iudgment to conceale them. The sight of this gold doth not onely dasse *Fiesco's* eyes, but eclipse his fidelity; so he holds it no sinne towards God, nor treachery towards his master, to reueale it; but takes it, and informes him, that he is the *Baron* of *Carpi* his Laquay, who sent him from *Naples* thither, with a letter from him to the Lady *Fidelia* his sister. *Alcasero* growes pale heereat, and is very curious and hastie to see the Letter. *Fiesco* deliuiers it him, who steps aside, and reades it: whereon he plucks his hat downe his forehead, and so making three or foure paces, reads it ore againe. He is perplexed to know as much as he sees, and grieued, not to see and find as much as he desireth to know: hee now confirms his former suspision of *Carpi*, and beleeueth that hee is a chiefe Actor, or Agent in his fathers *Tragedy*. But hee knowes it wisdom to vse silence in the discovery of a crime of this nature; and therefore calles *Fiesco* to him; bids him

ſtay that night, and to ſpeake with him in the morning before he depart.

Alcaſero withdrawes himſelfe from the Garden to his Cloſet, and there againe peruſeth this Letter of *Carpi's*: he finds it full of ſuſpition, and ambiguities, and perceiues it hath a relation to former Letters; yea, there is a myſterie in this Letter, the which hee muſt vnlocke and find out, ere he be ſatisfied: for although *Carpi* be ſquint-eyed, yet hee feares hee hath looked too right on his father. Hee flies to *Fidelia's* Cloſet, Trunke, and Casket, and finds a former Letter of *Carpi's* to her, and the copie of one of hers to him; and the peruſall of theſe two Letters are ſo far from diminifhing his ſuſpition, as it doth augment and encrease it: for now hee verily beleeuces, that *Carpi* and his ſiſter *Fidelia*, haue ioynthly had a great hand in his fathers murther. But all this while hee doth not once ſo much as ſuſpect or imagine, that his other ſiſter *Caleſtina* hath played any part in this Tragedy: but *Time* is the daughter of *Truth*, as *Truth* is that of *Heauen*. In the morne, he calles for *Fieſco*, to whom he giues this farewell: *Tell the Baron of Carpi, thy Maſter, that my ſiſter Fidelia is in another world, and not in this, and that ſhortly I reſolue to ſee him at Naples, and that in the interim, I will reſerue his Letter.* *Fieſco* departs, but knowes, he hath ſo highly betrayed and wronged his Maſter, as he dares not ſee him, and ſo ſhewes him a faire paire of heeles. Such Laquayes faire better deſerue a halter, then a Liucry. *Carpi* wonders at his Laquayes long ſtay: In which meane time *Alcaſero* comes to *Naples*, where hee is yet irrefolute, whether to accuſe *Carpi* by the order and courſe of Law, or to fight with him: but hee reſolues

solues to doe both; and that if the Law will not right him for the murther of his father, his sword shall. He goes to the *Criminell Iudges*, and with much passion and sorrow, accuseth the *Barron of Carpi* for murthering of the Captaine *Benevente* his father; and for proofoe hereof, produceth his two Letters to his sister *Fidelia*, and the copie of one of hers to him. Whereupon the Iudges graunt power to apprehend *Carpi*, so hee is taken and constituted prisoner: and now hee hath leasure to thinke of the basenesse and foulness of his fact. But he is so farre from deiecting himselfe to sorrow, or addicting himselfe to repentance, as he puts a brazen face on his looks and speeches, and so peremptorily intends and resolues to deny all. Had he had more grace, or lesse impietie, he would haue made better vse of this his imprisonment; and haue shewen himselfe, at least humble, if not sorrowfull, for his offence and crime. But he holds it wisdom, in greatest dangers to shew most courage and resolution, and so makes himselfe fit to grapple and encounter with all accidents and occurrences whatsoever.

Men may palliate their sinnes, but God will finde them out, and display them in their naked colours. *Alcafero* is an importunate solicitor to the Iudges to draw and hasten on *Carpi* his arraignment: But they (resembling themselves) proceed therein modestly and grauely: they consult, and consider the three Letters: they find coniecturall circumstances enow to accuse, but no sollid proofoe to condemne him: they hold, that their opinions ought not to be swayed with the winde of euery presumption, and that it is not fit so triuially to set the life of a man at six and seauen. Besides, as they approoue of *Alcafero* his affection to his

father, so they dislike of his impetuositie and vehemency towards *Carpi*. They all resolve to lay the Sword of *Iustice*, in the ballance of *Equitie*, and then ordaine that *Carpi* shall be rackt, to see whether they can draw more light from his tongue, then from his pen. But hee indures these his tortures and torments with wonderfull constancy, and still denyes all. Had his cause been more religious and humane, and not so bloody, this fortitude and courage of his, had been as praise-worthy, as now it is odious and execrable. The *Courts* by sentence (pronounced in open *Senate*) acquit and cleare *Carpi* of this murther: whereat *Alcasero* exceedingly repines and murmures.

It is not enough that *Carpi* hath now escaped this danger; for *Alcasero* remains still constant in his conceit, that he is the murtherer of his father, and therefore vowes and resolves to fight with him: Hee lets passe some sixe weekes time, till hee bee sound of his limbs, and then resolves to send him a challenge. Had *Carpi* been innocent, it had been more honorable and requisit, that he had challenged *Alcasero*, then *Alcasero* him: but his cause being vniust, and his Conscience fearefull, he dares not runne the hazard, to be desirous or ambitious to fight with *Alcasero*: the which if hee had attempted, *Alcasero* will anticipate and preuent him; who making *Plautinus* his Second, he out of the ashes of his sorrow, and the fire of his reuenge, sends him to *Carpi* with this Billet of Defiance:

Although the Law haue cleared mee for the murther of my Father, yet my Conscience cannot, and my Rapyer will not. I should bee a Monster of Nature, not to seeke reuenge for his death, of whom I haue receyued
my

my life. Could I giue peace to my thoughts, or vntinke thee the cause of my disaster, I would not seeke to bereane thee of thy life, with the hazard of mine owne. But finding this not onely difficult, but impossible, pardon mee if I request thee to meet mee single, at eight of the clocke after Supper, at the West end of the Common Vineyard, where I will attend thee with a couple of Rapiers, the choyce whereof shall bee thine, and the refusall mine: or if thou wilt make use of a Second, he shall not depart without meeting one to exchange a thrust or two with him.

ALCASERO.

Whiles the *Barron* of *Carpi* is triumphing to see how he hath bleared the eyes of his Iudges, and so freed himselfe from the feares and danger of death, behold, *Plantinus* findes him out, and deliueris him *Alcasero* his Challenge. He takes it, and with a variable countenance reades it, whereat he finds a reluctation and combate, not onely in his thoughts, but his Conscience, whether hee should accept, or refuse it. His *Honour* bids him doe the first; but his Conscience wills him to performe the second: it were better to bee borne a Clowne, then a Coward. Besides, if hee should refuse to fight with *Alcasero*, he vpon the matter makes himselfe guiltie of the *Captaine* his fathers death. Hee knowes he hath an vniust cause in hand, but he preferres his *Honour* before his *Life*, when setting a good face vpon his resolution, hee addresseth himselfe to *Plantinus* thus:

Sir, I presume you know this businesse: for I take you to be *Alcasero's* Second. Hee hath (replyed *Plantinus*) done me the honour to make choyce of me, in stead of a more worthy. Well (quoth the *Barron* of

Carpi) tell thy master from me, That although I haue not deserued his malice, yet that I accept his Challenge, and will performe it, onely I must fight single, because I am at present vnprovided of a Second. *Plantinus* (as full of Valour as Fidelitie) prays him, that hee may not see his hopes and desires frustrated, but that hee may inioy part of the feast. But *Carpi* giues him this answere, which hee bids him take for his last resolution: That he will hazard himselfe, but not his friend. So *Plantinus* returnes with ioy to his Master, and discontent to himselfe: when nothing proouing of power, to quench the fire of these two *Gentlemens* courage and reuenge, they meete at the time and place appoynted. *Carpi* fights with passion and vehemency; *Alcasero* with iudgement and discretion. *Carpi* lookes red and fiery with choller, and *Alcasero*, pale and gasty, not for feare of his cause, but for the remembrance of his sorrowes: and to conclude and shut vp this combate in the issue thereof, *Iustice* is not now pleased to shewe the effects of her power and influence; nor *God* that of his Iustice, onely it is reserued for another time, & for a more shamefull manner: so *Carpi* hath the best of the day, for hee is onely hurt in his right hand, and scarred ouer both his lippes, as if the prouidence and pleasure of *God* had ordained, that that hand which committed the murther, and that mouth which denyed it, should be purposely punished, and no part else. As for *Alcasero*, he had fīue seuerall wounds, whereof one being thorow the body, made *Carpi* beleue it was mortall, and the rather, for that hee fell therewith speechlesse to the ground: so leauing him groueling & weltring in his blood, he departs, resting very confident, that hee

hee was at his very last gaspe of life, and poynt of death. But *Carpi* his *Chirurgion* (being more humane and charitable then his master) leapes ouer the next hedge, and comes to his assistance: He leanes him against a banke, bindes vp his wounds, and wraps him in his cloake, and so runnes to a Litter, which he saw neere him, and prayes the Lady that was in it, that she would vouchsafe to take in *Don Alcasero*, who was there extremely and dangerously wounded: and this did *Carpi* his *Chirurgion* performe, in the absence of *Alcasero's* owne *Chirurgion*, who out of some distaste or forgetfulnesse, came not at the houre and place assigned according to his promise. It was the Lady *Marguerita Esperia*, who out of her noble and charitable zeale to wounded *Alcasero*, presently descended her Litter, commanding her seruants to lay him in softly, and to conuey him to his lodging, and shee her selfe is pleased to stay in the fields till her seruants returne it her. It was a *courtesie*, and a *charitie* worthy of so *Honourable* a Lady as her selfe: and in regard whereof, I hold it fit, to giue her remembrance and name a place in this History. All *Naples*, yea the whole Kingdome rings of this Combate; the *Barron* of *Carpi* and *Alcasero* are (ioyntly) highly commended and extolled for the same; the last for his affection and zeale to his dead father; the first, for giuing *Alcasero* his life, when it was in his power and pleasure to haue taken it from him. But God will not permit *Alcasero* to dye of these wounds, but will rather haue him liue to see *Carpi* die before him, though in a farre more ignoble and shamefull manner.

As soone as *Alcasero's* wounds are cured, and hee prettie well recouered, he leaues *Naples*, and returnes

to *Ostranto*, where his sister *Calestina* did as much shake and tremble, at the imprisonment of the *Baron of Carpi*, as shee now reioyces at his libertie; especially, sith shee is assured, that he hath no way accused her, nor vsed her name for the death and murder of her father, which indeed makes her farre more pleasant and merry then before, and within sixe moneths after marries with *Seignior Alonso Londonici*, whom shee euer from her youth had loued and affected, and with whom shee liues in great pleasure, state, and pompe; and no lesse doth her brother *Alcasero*, who for the courtesie which *Dona Margarita Essperia* shewed him, when hee was so dangerously wounded, in requitall thereof doth now marry the faire *Beatina*, her onely daughter, with whom he liues in the highest content and felicitie, as any *Gentleman of Italy*, or of the whole world, can either desire or wish.

But this *Sunne-shine* of *Carpi's* prosperitie, and *Calestina's* happinesse and glory shall not last long: for there is a storme breaking foorth, which threatneth no lesse then the vtter ruine, as well of their fortunes as liues. Where men cannot, God will both detect and punish murthers; yea, by such secret meanes and instruments, as we least suspect or imagine. They are infallible *Maximes*, that wee are neuer lesse secured, then when wee thinke our selues secure; nor nearer danger, then when we esteeme our selues farthest from it. And if any bee so incredulous, or as I may say, so irreligious, as not to belecue it, haue they but a little patience, and they shall instantly see it verified and made good in the *Barron of Carpi*, and the Lady *Calestina*, who thinking themselves now safe and free from all aduerse fortunes, and fatall accidents what-
foeuer,

soeuer, and enioying all those contents and pleasures, which their hearts could either desire, or wish to enioy, or which the world could prostitute or present them, they in a moment shall bee bereaued of their delights and glory, and enforced to end their dayes on a base scaffold with much shame, infamy, and misery. The manner is thus :

God many times beyond our hopes, and expectations, doth square out the rule of his Iustice according to that of his will : all men are to bee accountable to him for their actions, but he to none for his decrees and resolutions : it is in him to order, in vs to obey ; yea, many times hee reprimands vs, but yet with no intent to pardon vs. Curiosity in matters of Faith and Religion, prooues not onely folly, but impietie : for as we are men, we must looke vp to *God*, but as we are *Christians*, wee must not looke beyond him. Hee oftentimes makes great offenders accuse themselves for want of others to accuse them ; and when he pleaseth, hee will punish one sinne by another, the which we shal now see verified in *Lorenzo the Baron of Carpi* his Laquay ; that wretched and bloody *Lorenzo*, who as wee haue formerly heard, assisted this his master to murder Capitaine *Benevente* and *Fiamento*, neere *Alpiata* ; who euer since being countenanced and authorized by his Masters fauour, in respect of this his foule fact, wherein his bloody and murderous hand was deeply and ioyntly embrewed with him, hee from that time becomes so debauch'd and dissolute in his Service, as he spends all that possible hee can procure or get ; yea, and runnes likewise extreemely in debt, not onely with all his friends, but also with all those whom he knowes will trust him : so as his wants be-

ing extreemely vrgent, and enforced to see himselfe reduced to a miserable indigence and pouertie. Hee being one day sent by the *Baron* his Master to the *Senate* house, with a Letter to his Councillor, hee there in the throng and crowd of people, cut a purse from a *Gentlewomans* side, wherein was some five and twentie Ducketons in gold, was taken with the maner, and apprehended, and imprisoned for the fact, and the next morne his Proesse was made, he found guiltie, and condemned to be hanged: So he is dealt withall by a couple of Fryers in prison, who prepare his soule for *Heauen*: He sees the foulness of his former life, and repents it. The *Baron* of *Carpi* his Master, no sooner vnderstands this newes, but hee shakes and trembles, fearing least this his Laquay should reueale the murder of the Captaine and his man: whereupon hee resolueth to flye, but considering againe, that if his Laquay accuse him not, his very flight will proclaim and make him guiltie: hee stayes, and as hee thinks, resolues of a better course: Hee goes to the prison, and deales with his Laquay to be secret in the businesse he wots of, protesting and promising him, that in consideration thereof, hee will enrich his mother, and brothers. *Lorenzo* tels him, that he need not feare: for as he hath liued, so he will die his faithfull seruant: But wee shall see him haue more grace, then to keepe so gracelesse a promise. *Carpi* flattering himselfe with the fidelitie and affection of his Laquay, resolues to stay in the Citie: but he shall shortly repent his confidence. He was formerly betrayed by *Fiesco*, which mee thinks should haue made him more cautious and wise, and not so simple to entrust and repose his life on the incertaine mercy of *Lorenzo's* tongue: but

but Gods reuenge drawes neere him, and consequently he neere his end; for hee neither can nor shall auoyd the iudgement of *Heauen*.

Lorenzo on the gallowes, will not charge his soule with this foule & execrable sin of murther: but *Grace* now operating with his soule, as much as formerly *Sathan* did with his heart, he confesseth, that he and the Barron of *Carpi* his Master, together with the Knight *Monte-leone*, and his Laquay *Anselmo* murthered the Captaine *Benevente*, and his man *Fiamento*, and threw them into the Quarry, the which hee takes to his death is true: and so vsing some *Christian-like* speeches of repentance and sorrow, he is hanged.

Lorenzo is no sooner turned ouer, but the *Criminall Iudges*, aduertised of his speeches deliuered at his death, they command the Baron of *Carpi* his lodging to bee beleagred, where he is found in his Study, and so apprehended, & committed prisoner, where feare makes him looke pale; so as the Peacockes plumes both of his pride & courage strike faile. He is againe put to the Rack, and now the second time he reueales this foule and bloody murther, and in euery poynt acknowledgeth *Lorenzoes* accusation of him to bee true: So he is condemned, first to haue his right hand cut off, and then his head, notwithstanding that many great friends of his sue to the *Victroy* for his pardon. The night before hee was to dye the next morne, one of his Iudges was sent to him to prison, to perswade him to discouer all his complices in that murther, besides *Monte-leone* and his Laquay *Anselmo*; yea, there are likewise some Diuines present, who with many religious exhortations perswade him to it: So *Grace* preuailes with Nature, and *Righteousnes* with Impiety

and sinne in him; that he is now no longer himselfe, for contrition and repentance hath reformed him: he will rather disrespect *Calestina*, then displease God: wherupon he affirms, that she and her deceased sister *Fidelia*, drew him and *Monte-leone* to murder their father, and his man *Fiamento*; and that if it had not bin for their allurements and requests, they had neuer attempted either the beginning or end of so bloody a businesse: and thus making himselfe ready for *Heaven*, and gricuing at nothing on *Earth*, but at the remembrance of his foule fact, hee in the sight of many thousand people, doth now lose his head.

This *Tragedy* is no sooner acted and finished in *Naples*, but the Iudges of this Citie send away poast to those of *Otranto*, to seize on the Lady *Calestina* (who in the absence of her husband for the most part liued there:) A Lady whom I could pity for her youth and beaurie, did not the foulencesse of her fact so foulely disparage and blemish it. Shee is that instant at a *Noblemans* house, at the solemnity of his daughters marriage, where shee is apprehended, imprisoned, and accused to be the author & plotter of the *Captain* her fathers death; neither can her teares or prayers exempt her from this affliction and misery. She was once of opinion to deny it, but vnderstanding that the *Baron* of *Carpi* and his Laquay *Lorenzo* were already executed for the same in *Naples*, she with a world of teares freely confesseth it, and confirmes as much as *Carpi* affirmed: wherupon in expiation of this her inhumane *Paraside*, she is condemned to haue her head cut off, her body burnt, and her ashes throwen into the ayre: for a milder death, and a lesse punishment the Lord will not (out of his Iustice) inflict vpon her, for this
her

her horrible crime, and barbarous cruelty committed on the person of her owne father, or at least seducing and occasioning it to bee committed on him; and it is not in her husbands possible power to exempt or free her hereof. Being sent backe that night to prison, she passeth it ouer (or in very truth the greatest part thereof) in prayer, still grieuing for her sinnes, & mourning for this her bloody offence and crime; and the next morne being brought to her execution, when shee ascended the scaffold, she was very humble, sorrowfull, and repentant, and with many showers of teares requested her brother *Alcasero* and all her kinsfolkes to forgie her, for occasioning and consenting to her fathers death, and generally all the world to pray for her; when her sighs and teares so sorrowfully interrupted, and silenced her tongue, as she recommending her soule into the hands of her Redeemer, whom shee had so heynously offended, shee with great humilitie and contrition, kneeling on her knees, and lifting vp her eyes and hands towards heauen, the Executioner with his sword, made a double diuorce betwixt her head and her body, her body and her soule; and then the fire (as if incensed at so fiery a spirit) consumed her to ashes, and her ashes were thrown into the ayre, to teach her, and all the world by her example, that so inhumane and bloody a daughter, deserued not either to tread on the face of this Earth, or to breathe this ayre of life.

Shee was lamented of all who either knew or saw her, not that shee should die, but that shee should first deserue, then suffer so shamefull & wretched a death: and yet shee was farre happier then her sister *Fidelis*, for shee despaired, and this confidently hoped for remission

mission and saluation. Thus albeir this wretched and execrable yong *Gentlewoman* liued impiouſly, yet ſhe dyed *Chriſtianly*: wherefore let vs thinke on that with deteſtation, and on this with charity. And here we ſee how ſeuerely the murder of Captaine *Beneuente* was by *Gods* iuſt reuenge puniſhed, not onely in his two daughters, who plottred it, but alſo in the two Noble-men and their two Laquāyes, who acted it. Such attempts and crimes deſerue ſuch ends and puniſhments, and infallibly find them. The only way therefore for *Chriſtians* to auoid the one, and contemne the other, is with ſanctified hearts, and vnpolluted hands ſtill to pray vnto *God* for his *Grace*, continually to affect *prayer*, and inceſſantly to practiſe *pietie* in our thoughts, and *godlines* in our reſolutions and actions; the which if we be carefull and conſcionable to perſorme, *God* will then ſhroud vs vnder the wings of his fauor, and ſo preſerue and proteſt vs with his mercy and prouidence, as we ſhall haue
no cauſe to feare either *Hell*,
or *Sathan*.

THE



THE
TRIVMPHS OF
 GODS REVENGE A-
 gainst the crying and execrable
Sinne of Murther.

History X V.

*Maurice like a bloody villaine, and damnable sonne,
 throwes his Mother Christina into a Well, and
 drownes her: the same band and arme of his wherewith
 he did it, rots away from his body; and being discred
 of his wiss in Prison, he there confesseth this foule and
 inhumane murther, for the which he is hanged.*

IF wee did not wilfully make our selues mi-
 serable, God is so indulgent and mercifull
 to vs, as he would make vs more happie;
 but when with high and presumptuous
 hands we violate the Lawes of *Nature* and *Grace*, of
Earth and *Heauen*, in murthering through Enuie
 those, whom through *Dutie* and affection wee are
 bound to obey, honour, cherish and preferue: then it
 is no maruell, because we first forsooke God, that he
 after abandoneth vs to our selues, and sins, and to the
 fruits thereof, Calamity, Misery, Infamy and Perdi-
 tion; and that we may see humane cruelty to be iustly
 met with and punished by Gods vpright and diuine
 Iustice,

Iustice, Loehere in this insuing History we shall see a wretched sonne kill his harmelesse and deere mother. A very fearefull and lamentable *Parracyde*, a most cruell and execrable fact, for the which we shall see him rewarded with condeigne punishment, and with a sharpe and infamous death; although not halfe so deplorable as deserued. It is a bitter and bloody *History*, the relation and remembrance wherof in the most barbarous and flinty hearts is capeable, not only to ingender compassion, but compunction: yea, not onely contrition, but teares, at least if wee haue any place left in vs for *Pitty*, or roome for *Pietie*; the which if we haue, doubtlesse the end of our reading will not onely blesse, but crowne the beginning, and the beginning the end thereof.

VPon the North-east side of the Lake *Leman*, vulgarly knowne and called the Lake of *Genena*, (because it payes its full tribute, and make its chieftest *Rendezvous* before that City, whereof it inuiro-
neth at least one third part.) There stands a prettie small and strong towne, distant a little dayes iourney from it, termed *Morges*, which properly belongs to the iurisdiction of *Berne*, one of the chieftest *Cantons* of that warlike people and Country of *Swisserland*, wherein of verie late yeares, and recent memory, there dwelt a rich and honest Burger or Burgemaster (for of Gentry those parts and people are not, because they will not be capeable) named *Martin Halsenorse*, who by his wife *Christina Smuytsaren*, had one onely child, a sonne named *Maurice Halsenorse*, now of some foureteene yeare old; whose father although he were by profession a souldier, and inrolled a Lieut-
tenant,

nant, to one of those *Auxiliary* Bands of that Country which are in pay to the *French King*; yet neuertheless his chiefest ambition and care was, to make this sonne of his a scholler, because the Ignorance and illiterature of his owne age, made him to repent it in himselfe, and therefore to prouide a remedy thereof in his sonnes youth, sith he now knew and sawe, that a man without learning, was either as a body without a soule, or a soule without knowledge and reason; which are her chiefest vertue, and most sacred *Ornaments* and *Excellencies*: So he brings him vp to their owne *Grammar Schoole* in *Morges*, where in some three or foure yeares his affection and care to studie, makes him so good a *Proficient*, as he becomes not onely skilfull, but perfect therein, and almost as capable to teach his Schoole-master, as hee was to instruct him: yea, and to add the better *Grace*, to the *Grace* of that *Art*, he was of so milde and so modest a carriage, and the blossomes of his youth, were so sweetly watred with the *Heauenly dew* of *Vertue* and *Piety*, as if his manners and himselfe were wholly composed thereof; so that for *Learning* and *Goodnesse*, hee was, and was iustly reputed, not onely the *Mirrour*, but the *Phoenix* of all the youth of *Morges*; and as hee esteemed himselfe happy in his Parents, so they reciprocally hold themselves, not onely happy, but blessed in this their sonne; but because the inherent corruption of our Nature, and the peruerfnesse and multiplicity of our sinnes are such, as they cannot promise vs any true ioy, much lesse assured and permanent felicity: so the Sunne-shine of this their Temporary content, equally deuided in thirds betwixt the Father, Mother and Sonne, will shortly

receiue a great ecclipse, and a fatall disaster, which will be to them by so much the more bitter, and mournfull, sith both the cause and effects thereof, were of each of them vnthought of, of them all vnexpected.

For *God* in his sacred decree and prouidence, seeing *Martin Halsenorse* the Father, his strength arrived to its full *Meridian* and hight, and his dayes to their full number and periode: Hee, as he late at dinner iocund and merry with his wife and sonne, is suddenly taken with a deadly swoone, which presently deprives his body of this life, and sends his soule to enioy the sweet felicity and sacred ioy and immortality of the life to come: A *Document* which may teach vs not to rely vpon the rotten priuiledges and strength of youth, but so to prepare our liues, that death at all places, and in all times, may still finde vs armed and ready to encounter it: A *Document* which may teach vs with the erected eyes, as well of our faith, as body, so to looke from *Earth* to *Heauen*, that our soules be not onely ready, but willing to forsake this stinking Tabernacle and prison of our mortality, to flie and be admitted into *Heauen*, that *Heauenly Ierusalem*, and celestiaall City, where they may enioy the blessed *Communion* of the *Saints*, and the greatest blessings of all ioyes, & the most soueraigne ioy of all blessings, then to see our *Creator* and *Sauour*, *God* the Father, and *Christ Iesus* his Sonne face to face, wherein indeed all the ioyes and blessings of our soules, are comprised and included:

The death of *Halsenorse* the father, is not only the *Argument*, but the cause of his widdow *Christina's* griefe, of his sonne *Maurice's* sorrow, of her teares

and

and grones of his sighes & afflictions; yea, and not to derogate from the Truth, I may steppe a degree farther and say, that this his death is a fatall herauld, and mournfull harbinger which portends and prepares both of them, many disastrous calamities, and wofull miseries, the which in a manner are almost ready to surprize and befall them.

This sorrowfull widdow being thus deprived of her deere Husband, who was both her comfort and her ioy, her stay and her Protector, her Head and her glory; although he left her a good Estate, sufficient enough to warrant her against the feare of pouerty, and to secure himselfe against the apprehension of worldly Indigence; and wherewithall to maintaine both her selfe and her sonne, with somewhat more then an indifferent competency: yet shee saw her friends forsake her, and her Husbands familiar acquaintance abandone her, as if their friendship died with him, and that their remembrance of him was wholly raked vp, and buried in the dust of his grave. A most ingratefull disease and iniquity of our time, rather to be pittied then cured, and reprooued, then reformed, so fading and inconstant are the vnfriendly friendships of the world, who for the most part are grounded on profit, not on Honor, on auarice, not on Vertue, on their owne gold, not on the want of their Christian neighbours and bretheren: *But enough of this, and againe to our History.*

Now if *Christina* (for onely by that name I will henceforth intitle her) haue any comfort or consolation left her, to sweeten the bitterneesse of her Husbands death, it is onely to see him suruiue and liue in her sonne *Maurice*, in whose vertues and yeares, her

hopes likewise begin againe to bud forth and flourish, when remembering what an earnest care and desire her husband had to see him a Scholler, as shee inherites his goods, so shee will assume and inherite that resolution of his, and although she loue her sonnes fight, and affect his presence tenderly and dearly, yet she can giue no peace to her thoughts, nor take any truce of her resolutions, till she send him from *Morges* to the *Vniuersitie* of *Losanna*, some three leagues distant thence, there to perfect his Studies and learning, the seedes whereof already so hopefully blossomed forth, and fructified in him. To which end, her deepest affection and care hauing hearkened out one *Deodatus Vareseus*, a Bachelor of *Diuinitie* of that *Vniuersitie*, whom Fame (though indeed most falsely) had informed her to be an expert *Scholler*, and an excellent *Christian*, shee agrees with him; when allowing her sonne an honest exhibition, and furnishing him with Bookes, a Gowne, and all other necessities, she sends him away to *Losanna*, charging him at his departure to bee carefull of his Learning, carriage, and actions; and aboue all, to make pietie and godlinesse in his life and conuersation, the *Regent* of all his studies, when with teares of naturall affection, they take leaue each of other.

Maurice being arriued at *Losanna*, findes out his Tutor *Varesius*, who receiues and welcomes this his Pupill courteously and kindly: but alas, the hopes of *Christina* the mother, are extreamely deceiued in the vertues of *Varesius*, because his *Vices* will instantly deceiue both the merites and expectation of her Sonne, or rather change nature and qualities in him, and thereby shortly make him as vicious in *Losanna*,

as formerly hee was vertuous in *Morges*: for I write with grieve and pitie, that to define the truth aright, it was difficult to say, whether he were more learned, or deboshed, a more perfect Scholler, or prophane *Christian*: for albeit the dignitie of his Batchelorship of *Theologie*, did hide many of his dissolute pranks, and obscene imperfections, yet his exorbitant deportment and industry could not so closely overuaile and obscure them, but his intemperate affection to drinking, and beastly inclination to drunkenesse, began now to become obuious and apparant to the eyes and Heads of his *Colledge*, yea to the whole *Vniuersitie*: A most pernicious and swinish *Vice*, indeede too too much incident and subiect to these people the *Swisses*; but if it had been immured and confined within these Rockes and Mountaines of *Germany*, it had prooued not only a happinesse, but a blessing to the other Western part of the *Christian* world, where it spreads its infection like an vncontrouleable and incurable *Gangrene*, yea like a most contagious and fatall pestilence: so as in *Varesius* there was nothing more incongruous and different, then his Doctrine and his life, his profession and conuersation, his *Theorie*, and his *Practice*, his knowledge and his will. But if the head-springs and fountaines bee corrupted with this vice and drunkenesse, no maruell if the Riuer and Streames of *Common-weales* bee infected and poysoned therewith; yea, if it bee not debarred, but haue admittance and residence in the *Schooles* and *Classes* of *Vniuersities*, from which Nurseries and Gardens of the Muses, both the *Church* and *Estate* fetch their chiefeft Ornaments and Members: how can we expect to see it rooted out from the more illiterate

Commons, whose grosse ignorance makes them farre more capable to learne *Vice*, then *Vertue*; or rather *Vice*, and not *Vertue*; sith there is no shorter nor truer Art to learne it, then of their *Art Masters*, because the example and president of ill doing in our Teachers and Superiors, doth not onely plant, but ingrasse and root it; not onely priuiledge, but as it were, authorise it in vs, still with a fatall impetuositie, with a dangerous violence, and pernicious euent and issue: for if remedies be not to be found in learned *Physicians*, it is then in vaine to seeke them in the rude and vnlearned people; and if the *Preceptor* himselve bee not sanctified, it is rather to bee feared then doubted, that his *Disciple* will not. This (yea this) is a most mournfull and fatall rocke, whereon diuers vertuous and religious Parents, haue euen wept themselues to death, to see their children suffer shipwracke: yea, this beastly and brutish sinne of Drunkennesse, is still the Devils *Ysher* and *Pander* to all other sinnes; and therefore how cautious and carefull ought the Heads of *Schooles* & *Vniuersities* be, to expell and root it out from themselues, and to hate & detest it in others, sith in the remisse winking thereat, I may (with as much truth as sactie) affirm, that toleration, is confirmation, & conniency, cruelty; as we shall not go far to see it made good, and verified in this ensuing mournful History; the which in exacting Inke from my Pen, doth likewise command blood from my heart, and teares from mine eyes, to anatomize and vnfold it.

Difficully hath *Maurice* been three moneths in *Lasanna* with *Paresius*, but his vertues are ecclipsed and drowned in vice; yea, he not onely thinks, but holds it a vertue, to make himselve culpable and guiltie of
this

this his Tutors *Vice* of *Drunkennesse*, wherein within lesse then three moneths, hee prooues so expert, or indeed so execrable a *Scholler* in this beastly Art, as both day and night, he makes it not onely his practise, but his delight; & not onely his delight, but his glory. Hee who before was so temperate in his drinke and conuersation in *Morges*, as for the most part he wholly dranke water, not wine; now hee is so viciously metamorphosed in *Losanna*, as contrariwise, he onely drinks wine, and no water; yea, and which is lamentable to remember, and deplorable to obserue in this young *Scholler*, he drinks (or to write truer, deuoures it) so excessiuely, as his Cups are become his Bookes, his carrowsing, his learning, the Tauerne, his Studie, and Drunkennesse the only Art he professeth: which filthy and infectious disease, spreading from the *Preceptor* to the *Pupill*, from old *Varesius* to young *Maurice*, hath so surpris'd the one, and seiz'd on the other, as it threatens the disparagement of the first his reputation, and the shipwracke of the seconds fortunes, and it may be of his life.

Now *Varesius*, who will not bee ashamed to pitie this beastly *Vice* in himselfe, doth yet pitie it with shame to behold it in his Scholler *Maurice*, and yet hath neither the *Grace* to reforme it in himselfe, nor the will or power to reprove it in him; but instead of stopping and preuenting, doth in all things giue way to the current and torrent of this swinish sinne, which ineuitably drawes after it these threefold diseases and miseries: The poyson of our bodies, the consumption of our purses, and the moath and Canker of our reputations; or if you will these three not farre different from the three former: The bane of
our

our wits, the enemy of our health and life, and the consumer of our Estates and friends: And within the compasse of one whole yeare, to all those diseases and miseries doth the drunkenness of our deboshed young Scholler *Maurice* subiect and reduce him; so as it being the nature of sinne (not checked and vanquished with repentance) rather to grow then wither, to flourish then fade or decay with our age: the longer *Maurice* liued in *Lofanna*, the deeper roote this beastly vice of Drunkenness tooke in him, & he the deerer affection to it; so as that competent exhibition which his mother yearely allowed him, became incomputable with this his excessiue prodigality and intemperancy: Yea, his extreame superfluity in this kinde, was without intermission so frequent, as three quarters of his yeares pension could not discharge one of his expences and debts, so strong a habit (conuerted now to a second Nature) had this bewitching beastly sinne of drunkenness exacted and gotten of him, as if this were his felicity, and that hee onely triumphed to become a slaue to this his slauish appetite and swinish profession, which to support and maintaine, hee not onely feeds, but surfeits his mother with variety of subtil and insinuating letters, thereby to draw diuers summes of monies from her, as indeed hee doth; some vnder pretext of his necessitie to buy new bookes, which hee affirmed he wanted; others vnder pretence of his weakenesse and siknesse, and such like colourable excuses: which vnthriftie prodigality of his, doth as fast emptie her purse and store, as her industrious frugality can possibly fill them, whereof hauing all the reasons of the world to become senceible; shee at last making

making her iudgement consult with her affection, beeginnes now to feare, that her sonne was become lesse vertuous, and more deboshed then she hoped of, and that these his letters and petitions for money, were but onely trickes to deceiue the hopes, and betray the confidence she reposed in his vertuous carriage, and godly inclination; whercof being in fine informed and certified, from some *Students* and *Burghers* of *Losanna*, whom shee had set as *Sentinells*, to haue *Argus*, yea *Lyncus* eyes ouer his actions and deportments, she at last with few thanks to his *Tutor Varesius*, many complaints and exclamations to her sonne, and inexpressible griefe and sorrow to her selfe, calles and commands him home from *Losanna* to *Morges*, where with much bitternesse and secrecy, shee taxeth and rates him for his drunkennesse and prodigalitie, in that he had vainely spent in one yeare, more then either his father and her selfe could collect or gather vp in many.

But see the lewd subtiltie, and wretched deceitfulnessse of this dissolute sonne towards this his deare and tender mother: for then and there seasoning his speeches with vertue, and his behauiour with obedience and pietie, he modestly seemes not only to taxe her credulitie, conceiued against the candeur and integritye of his actions; but also with a kind of Tacite choller, to maligne and traduce those who iniustly and falsly had cast so foule an aspersiō on his vertues and innocency; and the better to make those his speeches, and this his *Apologie* and *Iustification* passe current with his mother, his discretion now prescribes so fayre a Law to his *Vanitie*, and his reason to his intemperate and irregular desires, as to the eye of the

E c

world,

world, and to her more curious and obseruant iudgement, hee seemes to be the very picture and Statue of *Vertue*, although *God* and his soule soule and Conscience well knowes, that he is the true, essentiall, and reall *Image* of *Vice*: and the better to cloke and overuaile this his dissimulation from the eyes of *God* and his mother, although he continue to take his Cuppes by night, yet in *Morges*, and especially in his mothers house and sight, he casts them off by day; and the better, and more firmly to reintegrate himselfe into her approbation and fauour, hee mornings and euening is scene at his prayers, and spends the greatest part of his time in hearing and frequenting of *Sermons*, the which affoordes such sweet content to her conceits and thoughts, as shee repents herselfe of her vnkindnesse towards him, and not onely acquits him of his drunkennesse, prodigalitie, and dissolutenesse, but also accuseth his accusers, who shee now as much condemnes for *Enuy* and *Malice* towards her *Sonne*, as shee highly (and as she thinks iustly) applauds him for his religious pietie towards *God*.

But sith Hypocrisie is worse then Prophanenesse, as making vs rather Deuils then Saints; or indeed not Saints, but Deuils; and that no sacrifice is so odious, nor obiect so hatefull to *God*, as he who denies and dissembleth it in his lookes, and yet professeth and practiseth it in his heart and soule: so we shall see to our grieve, and this wretched *Hypocrite* finde to his misery, that thinking to deceiue *God*, he shall in the end deceiue himselfe; and in attempting to betray his mother through his false *Vertue*, his true *Vice* will at last betray him, and make him as miserable, as hee flattereth himselfe it will make him fortunate.

Now

Now the better to root and confirme this opinion of his temperancy in his mothers conceits and mind, and so the more secretly to buttwaile his excessive affection and addiſion to *Drunkennesse*, he vnder the pretence of some necessary and profitable occasions, gets leaue of her, somtimes to ride ouer to *Berne, Soleure, Fribourg, Apensall*, and other capitall townes of the *Cantons*, where he falls afresh to his cups, and there continually both day & night swills his braines, and stuffes vp his belly with wine, as if hee tooke no other delight or glory, but to drowne his wit and learning with his money, and his health with both; and yet againe when he returnes to *Morges*, he makes such fayre weather with his mother, and casts so temperate a cloake and colour on his speeches and actions, as if it were impossible for him to drinke more then would suffice *Nature*, or to desire more then would meerely quench his thirst. And thus by his *Hypocriticall* policy, hauing againe wrought himselfe into his mothers good opinion and fauour, as also some store of money out of her purse and coffers; he with a feigned shew of *Humilitie* and discretion, takes leaue of her, and to perfect his studies and Learning, returnes againe to *Losanna*; where he is no sooner arrived, but vpon his new returne, he finds out his olde carrowling companions, who like so many pestilent Vipers, and contagious Moaths and Caterpillars, are viciously, and therefore fatally resolued, not onely to eate out the bottome of his purse, but also the heart of his happinesse; and as I may iustly rearme it, to deuoure the very soule of his felicitie: and with these tippling brats of *Bacchus*, doth our lewd and debauched *Scholler, Maurice*, continually drinke drunke, not

onely forgetting his leaping, but himselfe; and which is worse, his *God*, hauing neither the power to remember to repent, or grace to pray; nor to remember any thing, except his cups; so beastly is he inclined, so swinishly and viciously is he affected and addicted; and what doth this either prognosticate, presage, or promise to produce in him, but ineuitable affliction, misery, and ruine of all sides?

As the shortest Errours are best: so those *Vices* which haue longest perseruerance and predominance in vs, proue still the most pernicious and dangerous: It is nothing to crush a Serpent in the Egge; but if we permit it to grow to a Serpent, it may then crush vs: a plant may be remooued with ease; but an old tree difficultly: To fall from sinne to repentance, is as great a happinesse, as it is a misery to fall from repentance to sinne: and indeed to vse but one word for the affirmation and confirmation of this truth, there can no greater misery befall vs, then to thinke our selues happy, when (through our sinnes) wee are miserable.

Heere in *Lofanna*, *Maurice* esteemes this his beastly sinne of drunkennesse to bee a *Virtue*, not a *Vice* in him; yea, in paying for all shots and reckonings in *Tauernes*, he sottishly and foolishly thinks it the shortest and truest way to bee beloued and honoured, (though indeed to be contemned) of all; and therefore without feare or wit, yea without the least spark of *Grace*, or shaddow of consideration, his stomacke (like the Devils sponge,) and his vnfatiable throte (like a bottomlesse gulfe) so deuoures his wine, and his wine his money, as that which should be the *Argument* of his glory, he makes the cause of his shame; and

and his money which should fortifie his reputation he conuerts and turnes to ruine it. But as pouertie (in a iust reuenge of our *Vanitie*) reioyceth to looke on vs, because wee first disdained, either to looke on, or regard it; so hee hauing spent the fragrant Summer of his folly and prodigality, in wasting the monyes his mother gaue him, in wine; now the depriuation thereof makes him feeble the frosty Winter of that want, which hee can better remember, then remedy, rather repent, then redresse. The Fellowes and Students of his Colledge, looke on him and his Drunkenesse; some with the eyes of pittie, others with those of ioy, according as their friendship, or malice, their Charity or Enuy either conduct their passions, or transport, and steere their resolutions and inclynations. And for his Tutor *Parseus*, how can he possible seeke or reclayne this his Pupill from *Vice* to *Virtue*, when he is so wretchedly disolute, as by the publike vote and voyce of the *Vniuersitie*, hee himselfe is already wholly and soly relapsed from *Virtue* to *Vice*.

In which respect, this vitious young Student *Maurice*, hauing neither *Virtue* nor *Tutor*, money nor credit, discretion nor friend, to secure him from the shelues of Indigence, or the rockes of Pouerty and Misery, whereon hee is rashly and wilfully rushing; he like a true deboshed Scholler, or indeed as a Master of Art, in the Art of deboshednesse, first sels away his bookes, then his gowne and cloathes, and next his bed, being desirous to want any thing but wine; and confidently (though vainely and foolishly) assured, that if he haue wine enough, that then hee wants nothing. A miserable consideration and con-

dition, a wretched Estate and resolution, onely tending and conducing to direfull misery, and to deplorable pouerty and desolation.

But to replenish his purse, to repayre his credit, and apparell, and to continue his cuppes & drunkennesse, he hath no other hopes or refuge, then againe to cast himselfe on the affection and courtesie of his mother whom hee re-visits with seuerall Letters, which are onely so many humble insinuating petitions, againe to draw and wrest moneyes from her. But he is deceiued in his hopes, and expectation, or at least they distinctly and seuerally, and his mother ioyntly with them, conspire to deceiue him. For I write it with griefe, because (by an vncontroulable relation of the truth) shee dictates it to my pen with teares; that as well by all those of *Morges*, who came from *Lofanna*, as by all those of *Lofanna* who came to *Morges*, she is most certainly & sorrowfully aduertised of her sonnes deboshed and disolute life, of his neglect of Learning, and too frequent affecting and following of drunkennesse, of the sale of his cloathes, bed and bookes; of the erreparable losse, both of his time, moneyes and reputation; and withall, how the dregs and fumes of wine, hath metamorphised his countenance, and not Graced, but filthily disgraced it with many fiery Rubies and flaming Carbunkles; as also how it hath stuffed and bombasted vp his belly and body; as if the dropsie and he contended who should first seize each on other, and therefore shee being (with a mournfull vnwilliagnesse) enforced, not onely to take notice, but sorrowfully to rest assured and confident of these disasterous premises, the infallible predictions & *Symptomes* of her Sonnes vtter
ruine

ruine and subuersion : Shee peremptorily and absolutely refuseth his requests, answereth his Letters with many sharpe complaints and bitter exclamations against his foule sinne of Drunkenesse, which threatnes no lesse then the ruine, both of his Reputation, Friends, Learning, Fortune and Life, if not of his Soule.

Maurice, seeing himselfe wholly abandoned of his Mother, he knowes not how to liue, nor yet how to prouide the meanes to maintaine life, which not only surpriseth his thoughts, but amazeth and appaleth his cogitations with feare; yea, he takes this discontentie of hers so neere at heart, and withall is so extremely impatient, to see himselfe forsaken of her, whom hee knowes the Lawes of Nature hath commanded to affect and cherish: as forgetting himselfe to be her Sonne, and she his Mother; yea forgetting himselfe to be a man, and which is more a *Christian*, his wants and *Vices* so farre transports him beyond the bounds of *Reason* and *Religion*, of *Nature* and *Grace*, as hee impiously and execrably degenerates from them all and secretly vowes to his heart and soule, or to say truer, to the deuill: (who inchanteth the one, and infecteth and intoxicateth the other) that hee will speedily send her into another world in a bloody Coffin, if shee will not releue his wants and maintaine him as her Sonne in this. So Alas here it is, that he first giues way to the deuill to take possession of his thoughts and heart, and here it is, that he first assumes bad blood, and suggests bloody designs, against the safety and life of his deere and innocent Mother. When like a miserable wretch, and a wretched and impious villaine, his thoughts and studies
(like

(like so many lynes running to their centre) are now in continuall action and motion, how to finish and bring this deplorable Tragicall businesse to an end: yea, the better to feed this his insatiable bloody appetite, and to quench the quenchlesse thirst of his Matracidious reuenge, he forgets all other proiects and affaires, to follow and hasten on this; which (to giue one word for all) takes vp both his study and his time in *Lofanna*, casting away his bookes, which would seeme to diuert him from it, as if hee courted *Pluto*, not *Apollo*; *Proserpina*, not *Pallas*; *Errynnis*, not *Prania*; the *Furies*, not the *Muses*: and as afflictions seldome come alone, but many times (as the waues of the sea) fall one in the necke of another; so to make him rather aduance then retire, in the execution of this his vnnaturall and damnable attempt, his excessiue and frequent drunkennesse, makes him so notoriously apparrant to the Heads of the Vniuersity in generall, and of his owne Colledge in particular, that they giue him his *Conge*, and (without lending any care to his *Apologie* or Iustification) expell him thence: So that being now destitute of all friends and meanes, hee is enforced to see himselfe reduced to this point of misery, that hee must either begge or starue; which to preuent (because hee as much disdaines the first, as he is resolute to prouide a remedy for the second) he leaues *Lofanna* (where his Vices and debts haue made the stones too hot for him) and on foote, goes home to his Mother to *Morges*, hoping that his presence may preuayle more with her then his absence; and his tongue make that easie, which his pen (in his Letters) found not only difficult but impossible.

Being arriued at *Morges*, his louing & indulgent Mother, receiues him with teares, not of ioy, but of grief, for his Drunkenesse hath so deformed his face, and body; as at the first sight shee difficultly knew him to be her Sonne, and although hee take paines to conceale that beastly Vice of his, and so to playster, and varnish it ouer with a feigned shew of repentance and reformation; yet shee sees to her affliction, and obserues to her misery, that hee loues his Cups better then his life, and that as soone as shee once turns her backe from him; hee falls close to them; and so tripleth and carrouseth from Morning to Night. Three dayes are scarce past, before hee makes two requests to her, the one for new cloathes, the other for money; when, to the end that her wisdom might shine in her affection as well as her affection in her wisdom, shee cheerefully grants him the first, but peremptorily dennies him the second, because shee well knowes it would be so much cast away on him, sith he would instantly cast it away on wine, and to write the truth, the grant of his apparell doth not so much content him, as the refusall of her money doth both afflict and inflame him; He is all in choller hereat, and the fumes of Reuenge doe so implacably rake vp and seize on his thoughts, and they on it, as now without the feare of God, or care of his soule, hee like a damnable villaine, and an execrable Sonne, swaps a bargain with the Deuill, to destroy and make away his Mother: Hellish resolutions and infernall conceits, which will not onely strangle those who embrace, but confound those who follow them: His impiety made him formerly assume this bloody fast, and now his necessity of want of money, in that hee can

not as it were drowne himselfe in the excesse of Drunkenesse) enforceth him to a resolution to finish it. His faith is so weake towards God, and so strong with the deuill, as he will not retire with Grace, but aduance with impiety, to see as well the end as the beginning of this bloody businesse: Hee consols hereon with his delight, not with his reason, with his will, not with his Conscience; with his heart; not with his Soule. Hee sees hee hath no money, and knowes, or at least beleues, that his Mother hath enough, and therefore concludes, that if she were once dead, it were impossible, that his life should want any. So these two wretched Councillors, *Conuotousnesse* and *Drunkenesse*, (or rather *Conuotousnesse* to maintaine his *Drunkenesse*) like two infernall fiends and furies, haule him on head-long to perpetrate this bloody and mournfull murder of his deere and tender Mother, the end whereof, will bring him as much true misery and infamy, as the beginning doth flatter and promise him false content and happiness; his youth hath no regard to her age, and lesse to her Life, neither will hee vouchsafe to remember that hee first receiued his of her. yea, all the blood which flowes in his heart, and streames in his veins and body, cannot any way haue the power to prompt him, that it is deriued and descended from hers. And if *Morges* will not diuert him, *Lozanne* should, if his yeares cannot instruct him, yet his bookes might, and if *Nature* preuailed not with his heart, yet mee thinks *Grace* should with his Conscience, to represent him the foultenesse of this attempt, and the vnaturall cruelty thereof, in resolving to imbrew his diabolical hands in her innocent blood; or if the influence

fluence of these earthly considerations could not allay the heate of his malice, or quench the fire of his reuenge towards her, yet mee thinks looking from prophanenesse to piety, from Earth to Heauen; from the time present, to the future; from the corruption of his Body, to the immortality of his Soule, from Sinne to Righteousnesse, from Reuenge to Religion, and consequently from satan to God, hee should hate this bloody designe and proiect of his as much as now he loues it, and seeke the preseruacion of his Mother, with as much obedience and affection, as now he contriues and pursues her vntimely end with impiety and detestation. But his Vices will still triumph ouer his Vertues; and therefore it is rather to be feared then doubted, that they will in the end worke him too miserable, euer to see himselfe so happy.

Miserable *Maurice* therefore, (as the shame of his time, the disgrace of his sexe, and a prodigious monster of *Nature*) having hellishly resolved on the matter, now with a deuilish fortitude and hellish assurance passeth on to the maner of her Tragedy. He will not giue care to God, who seekes to diuert him from it, but will hearken to the deuill, who vseth his best Oratory to perswade and intice him to it. But as the deuill is malicious in his subtilty, so should we be both wise and cautious in our credulity; for if wee beleue him, he will betray vs; but if wee beleue God, we shall then betray him: he is impatient of delayes, yea, his malice is so bloody, and his renenge so cruell, as hee thinks every houre a yeare, till hee hath sent her from Earth to Heauen. He proposeth vnto himselfe diuers wayes to murder her, and the deuill who

is neuer absent but present in such hellish occasions, makes him as well industrious as vndicaine, and implacable, in the contriuing and finishing thereof. Now he thinke to cut her throate as shee is in bed : Then to poyson her at table, either in her meate or drinke. Then againe hee is of opinion to hire some to kill her as shee is walking in her vineyards, or else to cause two Watermen to drowne her, as shee is taking the ayre in a boate on the Lake, which twice or thrice weekly she is accustomed to doe ; but yet still he is irresolute, either which, or which not to resolute on, till at last after a weekes dilatory protaction, hauing with a satall and infernall ratiocination banded and rebanded these seuerall bloody proiects in his braynes and contemplations, hee reiecteth them all, as more fuller of difficulty and apparant danger, then of warrantable safety, when considering that there was a deepe Well in the outter yard, adioyning to the Garden, he holds it fittest for his purpose to drowne her therein, whereon the deuill and he strikes hands, and set vp their rest and periode.

Whiles thus this gracious mother *Christina* endeauiors with her best care and prayers, to diuert her gracelesse sonne *Maurice* from this his intemperate, and beastly sinne of *Drunkennesse*, he (as if hee were no part of her, but rather a limbe of the Deuill) with a monstrous and inhumane ingratitude, sets his inuentions and braines on the tenter hookes, to espy out the occasion and time to dispatch her. When burning with a flaming desire, to quench the insatiable thirst of his reuenge in her blood : he (taking time and opportunity at aduantage) seeing all his mothers people abroad to gather in the Vintage, the well open, and shee

shee with a Prayer booke in her hand, walking in the Garden next adioyning, the Deuill infused such courage to his heart, his heart such crueltie and inhumanitie to his soule, and his soule to his resolutions, that all things seemed then to conspire, to see an end to this his so long desired and affected businesse of murdering and dispatching his mother, he taking on him the part of a mad man; whom it seemed sorrow had suddenly afflicted, and griefe distracted, hee with his hat in his hand, hastily and furiously rusheth into the Garden to his mother, and cries out to her, that there is one of the neighbours children fallen into the well, which he espyed from his chamber window: whereunto (harmelesse good woman) she adding beliefe to his false and perfidious speeches, and being (beyond her selfe) afflicted and amazed with this sodaine and sorrowfull newes, shee throwes away her Booke, and hand in hand with him, (her sighes interrupting her words, and her teares her sighes) she (as if pittie added wings to her feet) trips away to the well, both to see this mournfull spectacle, and chiefly to know, if it any way lay in her possible care to assist, or power to preserue the said child from death: when bringing her to the well, hee better like a fury, then a man, and rather resembling a meere Deuill, then a sonne, fasteneth his left hand on the well-post, and as she lookes into the profunditie thereof, hee with his right hand tips and throwes her in, and so without any more doing, claps downe the couer thereof; when reioycing in his heart that he had sent her to death, because he sees and knowes it now, not in the power of the whole world to saue her life. He (the better to oueruaile this his impious villany, and to obscure this

his barbarous and bloody fact) ascends her chamber, breakes open her cupboard, trunks, and chests, takes away most of her money, and siluer plate, which hee priuately hides away for his owne behoofe and vse, and so scattereth a few pieces of money, and some of her clothes and apparell in the floore, thereby subtilly to insinuate and intimate to the world, that it were theues who had robbed and drowned his mother; when stealing a horse out of the stable, he with much secrecy gets him out of the backe doore, which hee leaues open, and from thence rides away to his mothers people in the Vineyards; to whom he relates he hath been all that morne abroad to take the ayre, and is now come to passe the remainder of the day with them, and to be merry: to which end (in his mothers name) he sends for wine from the skirts of the town; and so (as well men as mayds) they carrowse and frolike it till towards night, and then they all returne home, where they find both doores open, his mother their Mistris wanting, and no creature whatsoeuer in the house, whereat they much admire and wonder. So the seruants and himselfe seeke and call her in the Orchards and Gardens, but in yaine, for they find no newes of her; when the mayds one way, and he and the men-seruants another way, seek her as well in the roomes and chambers, as in the streets and neighbors houses, where shee is accustomed to frequent, but to no purpose; for they can neither see nor heare of her; till at length the maydens rushing into her bed-chamber, they find her Cupboard, Chests, and Trunks broken open, and some of her money and apparell strewed heere and there on the floore; whereat amazed, they lamentably cry out at windowes, that theeues haue

haue been there, and robbed their Mistris her Chests and Trunks: which *Maurice*, and the men- servants of the house over-hearing, they ascernd, and admire at the sight thereof; neither dorch his outward feares, or their inward apprehensions, stop or stay at the meere losse of the goods, but they ioyntly apprehend, and feare the absence of his mother; and their Mistris *Christina*, and are already become calous and vmbragious of her safetie, and very fearefull, that the theeues haue offered her some violence and crueltie. Whereupon late at night, hearing no newes of her, her sonne (because she flyeth in the night, for some accidents) goes and acquaints the *Bayliffe of Aragon*, and the rest of the *Criminall Officers* therewith; who of all sides enquire for her, and make a feiour, and rigorous search in the towne, to find out the theiues, and in the meane time (together with *Maurice*, and the seruants) leave not a room nor place of the house, and sought for her: but their diligence proves vaine; for they can purchase no newes of her, except lesse of the theiues. They remaine in the house all night, and they all with sorrowfull and watchfull eyes; every minute of an houre, expect her, or newes of her. Eight of the clocke the next day strikes; but as yet there is not so much as scene or heard of her. So they againe, in presence of the *Bayliffe*, retires and search all places and corners both in the House, Gardens, Orchyards, and Yards; but still to no effect or purpose: when behold, the sacred and ferre providence of God, in revealing her to be drowned in the well, not onely beyond the expectation; but also beyond the beliefe of all that were present: for as they are in the midst of their doubts and feares, yet in the very

very depth of their research and perquisition; loe, one of the seruant Mayds, named *Hester*, who was neereſt in the ſabour, and deareſt in the affection of her *Miſtris*, hauing that very inſtant morning taken a nap of an houres ſleepe, or thereabouts in a chayre, ſtarts ſuddenly out of her ſleepe and reſt, trips to them, and ſeyes, ſhee then and there dreamt, that her *Miſtris* *Chriſtina*, was caſt into the well, and drowned; the which ſhee affirmed with many words, and more ſighes, out-cries, and teares; which peircing into the eares and thoughts of the Bayliſſe and Seruants; and into the very heart and Conſcience of this our deſcrutable *Murtherer*, they looke pale with griefe and amazement; and hee ſtraineth the higheſt key of his Art and policy to keepe his chokes from bluſhing for ſhame thereby, ſo the better to hood-winke their eyes ſeindgements, from the leaſt ſpark conſhadow of this his guiltineſſe herein, he with many ſhowers of hypocriticall teares, prayes the Bayliſſe that vpon *Hesters* dreame, and report the Well may be ſearched; adding withall, that it was more probable then impoſſible; that theſe theeuſ who robbed his Mothers houſe, might likewiſe bee ſo deuiliſhly malicious to murder her and throw her into the Well: which the Bayliſſe ſeriously conſidering; as firſt the maides dreame, then the Sonnes requeſt and teares, bee inſtantly in preſence of all thoſe of the houte, as alſo of many of the next neighbours whom he had purpoſely aſſembled: Cauſed the Well to be ſearched and founded, where the hooke taking hold of her clothes, they inſtantly bring vp the dead body of his Mother and their *Miſtreſſe Chriſtina*: the ſkull of whoſe head was lamentably broken, and her braines

pittifully dashed out with her fall. All are amazed, her Servants grieve, and her hellish Sonne *Maurice* weepes and cries more then all the rest at this mournfull spectacle. The Bayliffe carefully and punctually againe examine *Hester*, if God in her dreame squealed her not, the manner how, and the persons who had thus throwne her Mistresse into the Well. Shee answereth negatively according to the truth, that shee had already deliuered as much as shee knew of that mournfull businesse. When *Maurice* to shew his forwardnesse and zeale, for the detection and finding out of his Mothers murderers, hee pretends that he suspects *Hester* to be accessary, and to haue a hand herein. But the Bayliffe and common Councell of *Morges*, having neither passion nor partiality to dazzle and inueagle the eyes of their iudgement, finding no reason or ground of probability to accuse her, or which might tend or conduce that way, They free her without farther questioning her, and so (as it hath bene formerly remembred) they all concurring in opinion that the theeues who robbed her, had vndoubtedly throwne her into the Well. They giue leaue to *Maurice* to bury his breathlesse mother, which he doth with the greatest pompe & decency, requisite as well to her ranke and quality, as to his affection and durie: and the better to fanne off the least dust or smoake of suspition, which might any way fall vpon the lustre of his Innocency, he at her Funerall, (to the eye of the world) sheds many riuolets of teares. But alas what is this, to this his foule and execrable sinne of murdering his mother, for although it bleere the eyes, and inueigle the iudgements of the Bayliffe and his associates, the Gyni-

well Iudges of *Morges*, yet God the Great and *Soueraigne* Iudge of *Heaven* and *Earth*; will not bee thus deluded, cannot be thus deceived herein. No, no, for albeit hee be mercifull, yet His deuine *Maiesty* is too iust, to let crimes of this hellish nature goe either vndetected or unpunished.

Wee haue seene this execrable Sonne so bloody hearted and handed, as with a deuillish rage, and inhumane and infernall furie, to drowne his own deere & tender Mother; & with as much cruelty as Ingratitude, to throw her from the world into a Well, who with many bitter gripes & torments (to the hazzard and perill of her life) threw him from her wombe into the world: and the prouidence and Iustice of *God* will not leaue the curiosity of the Reader farre, before wee see this miserable miscreant ouertaken, with the impetuous stormes of *Gods* reuenge, and the fiery gusts and tempests of his iust indignation for the same, notwithstanding that his subtill malice, and malicious subtilty, haue so cunningly contriued, and so secretly acted and compacted it with the deuill, that no earthly person or sublunary eye, can any way accuse, much lesse conuict him thereof; as make the sequell, and it will briefly and truly informe thee how.

As soone as he hath buryed his Mother, his blacke mourning apparell, doth in his heart & actions work such poore and weake effects of repentance and sorrow for her vntimely death, as where diuers others lament and griue, he contrariwise reioyceth and triumpheth thereat; and by her decease being now become Lord and Master of all, he like a gracelesse villaine falls againe to his old carousing companions,

and

and veine of drunkennesse; wherein hee takes such singular delight and glory, as hee makes it not onely his pastime and exercise by day, but his practise and recreation by night. And as the Lord hath infinite meanes and wayes to scourge and reuenge the enormity of our delicts and crimes, so wee shall shortly see for our instruction, and obserue for our reformation, that this vogelly and beastly Vice of drunkennesse of his, which is his most secret bosome and darling sinne, will in the end prooue a ravenous *Falke* to deuour, and a fatall *Serpent* to eate out the bowels, full of his wealth and prosperity, and then of his life; for it not onely takes vp his time but his studie, so much as I may as truly asseure to my griefe, as assure to his shame, that he leaueeth at nothing more then to make it his felicity, which sinne is necessary and intemperancy, as a punishment inseparably incident and infallibly hereditary to that sinne) doth within three monethes make him self away. All his habills, yea, and the greater part of his plate, and household stuffe, so his drunkennesse first, but then chiefly Gods iustice and reuenge pursuing his foule and inhumane crime of strutting his Mother, makes him, as being left rich by hery, within a very short space become very extreame poore and miserable; so as hee runnes deeply into debts, yea, his debts are by this tittle become so exceedingly vident and clamorous, as contrary to his hopes and feares, when he least dreames thereof, hee is imprisoned by his Mercer and Draper, for the blackes of his Mothers Funerall, to both whom hee is indebted the some of three hundred crownes, which is farre more then either his purse can discharge, or his credit and Estate

now satisfies. When abandoned of all his friends, his meanes spent and consumed, and nothing left him to exercise his patience in prison, but Dispaire, nor to comfort him, but the terrours of his bloody and guilty Conscience: Hee is clapt into a stinking Vault or Dungeon, where (in horror and detestation of his bloody cryme) the Glorious Lampe of Heaven, the Sonne, disdaines to send his radiant and glittering beames to comfort him: so as he who before was accustomed to fare deliciously, and as it were to swill and drowne himselfe in the best, and most curious wines, now hee must content himselfe onely with course bread and water, and yet his misery is so extreame, & that extremity of his so miserable, as he hath hardly enough to maintaine & sustaine life: But wee shall see that this first affliction of his, will instantly be followed and overtaken by a second.

Whitsunday being arived, hee petitioneth his Goaler (for that day) to haue the liberty of the yarde, and the freedome of the ayre, which is granted him, when at night, descending the stayres, againe to be pent vp in his obscure Dungeon, his foote slips, and he receiues a fearefull fall, whereof the bone of his right Arme is broken in two peeces, and hauing no Chirurgeon to looke to it, it purrifies and rots, so as for the preserving of his life, hee within fifteene dayes is enforced to haue it cut off, a little below the shoulder: and this was the very same Hand and Arme which threw his Mother into the Well. A singular act of Gods reuenging Iustice, and Iust reuenge shewen herein. Or that it may bee deeply imprinted in our hearts, and ingrauen in our soules, that the Reader hereof, of what sexe or quality soeuer,

euery; may as it were stand amazed, at the consideration of *Maurice*, his impious Sinne towards God; and of Gods due and true reuenge, and requittall thereof, in his iust Iudgement and affliction towards him.

But this is not enough for *Maurice* to suffer, nor for God to inflict on him for this his bloody and inhumane Crime, in murdering his Mother: nor to say the truth, it is but the *Prologue*, to the deplorable, yet deserved punishment, which is immediately ready to surprise and befall him. For to the end, that the truth may informe our curiositie, and our curiositie vs, of the *Catastrophe* of this Tragedy, we must vnderstand, that it was the pleasure and prouidence of God, that the breaking and casting away of *Maurice* his Armes, proued the breake-neck of his patience, and the cutting away of his content and iudgement: The deuill caused him most inhumanly to drowne his Mother, the which he might haue refused to perpetrate, but would not; and now God in expiation thereof, sends him Rage for Reason, Dispaire for Comfort, and Madnesse for Sobriety, the which hee would flie and eschew, but cannot. Hee hath committed this execrable crime beyond the rules and Lawes of Nature; and therefore God hath ordained, that hee should feele many degrees of punishments, and this is not onely the Law, but the rule of Grace. Of all degrees of afflictions, Madnesse is the most to be pittied; and the worst to be owed, for it makes a man goe farre beyond Reason; and therefore to come farre too short of himselfe, it is held of some to be a token of the Liue of others, an ouerfuming of the blood; and of others a debility of the braine. But in

this our execrable wretched *Maurice*, it was the infectious Malady of his Soule; which God sent purposely into his braines, to be reuenged of his heart, for so inhumanly drowning his Mother: For although his Diuine Maiesty, hath infinite more wayes to punish murder, then man hath to commit it, yet that he might make the detection of this of wretched *Maurice*, as strange as the complotting and finishing thereof was cruelly inhumane, and inhumanely cruell; he purposely sends it him; for although since his imprisonment, hunger had so raved dawning his stomacke; and quelled his courage, as his former volubility of speech, was now reduced to a kind of sorrowfull and peniue silence; yet as soon as his braines and senses, were possessed and enflamed with this prodigious Lunacy, so outrageous phrensie, then his fits were so violent; and that violence so implacable; as his speeches were so many fearefull outcries and howlings, and his words so many vacouth and vheard of sayings. So that whosoever either heard or saw him, hee might iustly condecue and as firme, that hee had thunder in his tongue and lightning in his eyes: For his crime made this his affliction and phrensie of his, so miserable, so impetuous, as he spake non sense perfectly, and looked rather like a Furie then a Man; yea, his soule Conscience and polluted soule, rung him so many *Sancti* feares, and terrors of Despaire, as hee was affrayd of all things; and angry with himselfe, because he could be no more affraid of himselfe: So as that Dangoon which could imprison his body, was not capable to containe his thoughts, in such sort as to restrain his feares; so in this miserable plight of perplexity, he remained

mained for the space of ten dayes and nights, without any intermission, or hope of remedy, which infinitely disturbed his fellow prisoners, and chiefly his Goaler, whose yeares had neuer beene accustomed to heare such discordant tunes, much lesse to be taken vp with such distastfull and fearefull melody. (He acquaints the Common Councell of the towne hercof, & importunately solliciteth them, that they will remooue his distracted prisoner *Maurice*, to some more fitter and more conuenient place. Who remembering what *Maurice* had beene, and now considering & seeing what he is, They, who heretofore would not be so charitable to releue his pueritie, are yet now so religiously compassionate, as they pittie his Madnesse. So they command him from a Dungeon, to a Chamber; from his pallet of straw to a feather bed; from his bread and water, to wholesome meates and broths; but all this will not suffice; and to shew themselves, not onely good men, but good Christians, they to restore him to his wits and senses, make yet a farther progression in Charity. They cause him to be conferred with, by many good Diuines, who are not onely eloquent, but powerfull to perswade him to pray often, and to practise other Christian duties & offices; but his cries are so outrageous, and his ravings so extravagant, as hee is as vnapeable to relish their reasons, as they are to vnderstand his rage: When the Very immediate Finger, & Providence of God makes them yet so sensible of his vnparaleld misery, as they are resolu'd to remooue him from his Prison to an Hospitall, thereby to take the benefit of the ayre in the Gardens, Walkes and Fields, hoping that they might preuaile with

with him, to recall his wits, and re-establish his senses in their proper seats of *Understanding*, and stations of *iudgement*. When heere, (*oh heere*) I conlure thee *Christian Reader* to stand amazed and wondred with me, at the sacred and secret Justice of the *Lord*, expressed and demonstrated in this Accident. For as his Vnder Gaoler (by the *Magistrates* Command) takes him by the hand, with an intent to conduct him forth from the Prison to an Hospitall; His bloody Crime (like so many Bloud hounds) pursuing his guiltie Conscience and Soule; his thoughts so inform'd his knowledge, and his knowledge so confirms his beliefe, that the drowning of his Mother is detected; and that they now draw him from his Prison to the place of Execution to suffer death for the same. Which apprehension and feare, *God* putting into his conceits and heart, in despite of his madnesse; he wanting an accuser. Lo, heere hee himselfe both accuseth and condemneth himselfe for the same; for the very Image of that conceite redoubliing his feare, as his feare did his phrensie and madnesse. He in the midst of those fits, and the height of that Agony and Anxietie, Cries out with a loud voice, *I haue drowned my Mother in the Well; I haue drowned my Mother in the Well, God will haue mee to Confesse it before he suffer you to hang mee; I speake it on earth, and by my part of Heaven, What I now Confesse is true.* Which words no soone escaped his tongue, but he instantly returns againe to his outcries of Phrensie and madnesse. His Gaolers, and therest are amazed at these fearefull speeches, and bloudy Confession of his; which notwithstanding that they attribute to madnesse, yet they leade him

to the Hospitall; He still raving and crying as he passeth the streets: But Oh! Let vs heere farther admire with wonder, and wonder with admiration, at the providence and mercy of God here againe miraculously made apparent and manifested in this execrable wretch *Maurice*, for hee who outragiously cried in his prison and licentiouslly raved in the street, is no sooner entered into the Hospitall, but the pleasure of God had so ordained it, as his Madnesse fully falls from him, and hee absolutely recovereth againe his wits and senses, in such firme and settled manner, as if hee had neuer formerly beene touched or afflicted therewith.

His Gaolers make report to the Magistrates, first of his confession of drowning his Mother, and then of his sudden and miraculous recovering of his perfect memory, iudgement and senses; as soone as he set foote within the Hospitall: Whereupon they as much astonished at the one, as wondering at the other; doe instantly repaire thither to him, and there araigne and accuse him, for that inhumane and bloody fact of his, whereof his owne Evidencc and Confession hath now made him guilty. But they take him for another, or at least, hee will not be the same man: Hee denies this horrible and bloody crime of his, with many oathes and asseuerations; which they maintaine and affirme he hath confessed; sayes, That they either heard a Dreame or saw a Vision; whereof hee neither dreamt nor thought of; and that he was ready to lose all the blood and life of his body to finde out, and to be revenged of the murderers of his Mother.

But the Magistrates are deafe to his *Apologie*. and

considering the violence of his Madnesse by its sudden abandoning him, as also his free and vninforced confession of drowning his Mother; they conceiue that Gods prouidence and Iustice doth strongly operate in the detection of this foule and inhumane murther; and therefore contemning his requests and oathes (in the vindication of his Innocency) they cause him to be refetched from the Hospitall, to the Prison, and there adiudge him to the Racke, when although his heart and soule be terrified and affrighted with his apprehension and accusation; Yet the deuill is so strong with him, as he cannot yet finde in his heart to relent, much lesse to repent this foule and inhumane crime of his; but considering that hee acted it so secretly, as all the world could not produce a witnesse against himselfe, except himselfe; he vowes hee will be so impious and prophane in his fortitude and courage, as to disdain these his torments; and to looke on them and his Tormentor with an eye, rather of contempt then feare: But God will be as propitious and indulgent to him, as hee is rebellious and refractory to God; for heere wee shall see both his Conscience and resolutions taught another rule, and prescribed a contrary Law; yea, heere wee shall behold and obserue in him, that now *Righteousnesse* shall triumph over *Sinne*, *Grace* over *Nature*, his *Soule* over his *Body*, *Heauen* over *Hell*, and *G O D* over *Satan*; for at the very first sight of the Racke, the sight & remembrance of his bloody crime, makes him shake and tremble extremely, when his soule being illuminated, by the resplendant Sunne beames of Gods mercy, and the foggie mists of Hell and Satan, expelled and banished

shed thence, hee falls to the ground on his knees, first beates his breast, and then erecting his eyes and hands towards Heauen; hee (with a whole deluge of teares) againe confesseth, that hee had drowned his Mother in the Well, from and for the which hee humbly craueth remission, both from Earth and Heauen.

And although there bee no doubt, but God will forgiue his soule for this his soule murther; Yet the Magistrates of *Morges*, who haue Grauity in their lookes, Religion in their hearts & speeches, & Iustice in their actions; will not pardon his body; so in detestation of this his feafull crime, and inhumane paracide, they in the morning condemne him, that very after-noon to be hanged. At the pronouncing of which sentence, as hee hath reason to aproue the equity of their Iustice in condemning him to die, so he cannot refrain from grieuing at the strictnesse of the time, which they allot him for his preparation to death. *But as soone as we forsake the deuill, we make our peace with God.*

All *Morges* and *Lofanna* rings of this mournfull and Tragicall newes, and in detestation of this mournfull, inhumane and bloody crime of our execrable *Maurice*, they flocke from all parts and streetes to the place of execution, to see him expiate it by his death, and so to take his last farewell of his life.

The Diuines, who are giuen him for fortifying and assisting his soule, in this her flight & transmigration from Earth to Heauen, haue religiously preuailed with him, so as they make him see the foulnesse of his crime, in the sharpenesse of his contrition and

repentance for the same; yea, hee is become so humble and withall so sorrowfull, for this his bloody and degenerate offence, as I know not whether hee thinke thereof with more griefe, or remember it with detestation & repentance. At his ascending the Ladder, most of his Spectators cannot refraine from weeping, and the very sight of their teares prooues the *Argument* of his; as his remembrance of murthering his Mother was the cause.

He tells them hee grieues at his very soule, for the foulness of his fact, in giuing his Mother her death, of whom he had receiued his life. He affirms, that Drunkenness was not onely the roote, but the cause of this his beggery and misery, of his crime and punishment, and of his deboshed life and deserued death, from which with a world of sighes and teares; hee seekes and endeouours to diuert all those who affect and practise that beastly Vice. He declares, that his Mother was too vertuous so soone to goe out of the world, and himselfe too vitious (and withall too cruell) any longer to liue in it; that the finnes of his life, had deserued this his shamefull death; and although hee could not prevent the last, yet, that hee heartily and sorrowfully repented the first. Hee prayed God to be mercifull to his soule, and then besought the world to pray vnto God for that mercy; when speaking a few words to himselfe, and sealing them with many teares, and farre fetched sighes; he lastly bids the world farewell, when enuited the Executioner to doe his Office, he is turned ouer.

And such was the vitious life, and deserued death of this Execrable Sonne and bloody Villaine *Maurice*: wherein I must confesse, that although his end were

were shamefull and sharpe; yet, it was by farre too too milde for the foulness of his crime, in so cruelly murthuring his deere Mother *Christina*, whom the Lawes, both of *Nature* and *Grace* commanded him to preferue and cherish: Yea, let all Sonnes and Daughters of all ages and ranckes, whatsoeuer looke on this bloody and disastrous example of his, with feare; and feare to commit the like by the sight of his punishment. It is a History worthy, both of our meditation and detestation, whether we cast our eyes on his drunkenness, or fixe our thoughts and hearts on his murther: Those who loue and feare God, are happy in their liues, and fortunate in their deaths; but those who will neither feare nor loue him; very sel-dome prooue fortunate in the one, neuer happy in the other; and to the rest of our finnes, if we once consent and giue way to adde that scarlet, and crying one of Murther; that blood which we vntimely send to the Earth, will in Gods due time draw downe vengeance on our Heads from *Heauen*; *Charitie* is the marke of a *Christian*, and the shedding of Innocent blood, either that of an *Infidell*, an *Atheist*, or a *Devill*. O therefore let vs affect and strue to hate it in others, and so shall wee the better know how to detest and abhorre it in our selues, which that wee may all know to our comforts, and remember to our con-

solations, direct vs O Lord our
God, and so we shall be
directed.

FINIS.

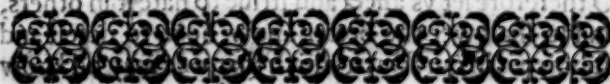
was himselfe and thatp: yet it was by this too
too much for the benefit of his church to continually
nourishing his dear Mother Church, whom the
lawe both of Nature and Grace commanded him to



to fight the like by the like to combat the like by the like
his punishment. It is a thing worth both of our
attention and desire that we cast our eyes

ERRATA.
no his drunkenness to fix our thoughts and hearts
PAGE 10 line 3. for will still affect him, read the, will still affect him.
p. 33. l. 3. for forsake, read wilt forsake. p. 61. l. 7. for to adde to the per-
fection, r. adde to the perfection. p. 66. l. 3. for chance, r. chaire. p. 10. line 22.
for bookes, r. booke. p. 63. l. 6. for fumes and reuenge, read fumes of reuenge.
p. 11. l. 1. for not onely, r. will not onely. p. 109. l. 5. for sequest, r. sequester.
p. 112. l. 30. for demolitions, read demolitions. p. 119. l. 9. for permit not those,
r. permit those. p. 124. l. 1. for beaule, read beauties. p. 127. l. 6. for semie,
read wide. page 134. l. 1. for crasse, read crasse. page 139. l. 5. for Spaine his
Master, r. of Spaine. p. 208. l. 13. for incomputable, read incompatible. pag.
219. l. 16. for worke him, r. make him. p. 231. l. 14. for yeares, r. eares.

send to the earth, which in gods time grow downe
renewance on our Heads from Heaues Canopye is the
mark of a Christian and the shedding of innocent
blood, which that of an heathen, or a Jew.



to the common, and remember to our con-
fession, that we O Lord our
God, and to we shall be
directed.

21112